# Intuitionistic Subframe Formulas, NNIL-Formulas and $n$-universal Models 

MSc Thesis (Afstudeerscriptie)<br>written by<br>Fan Yang<br>(born February 27th, 1983 in Sichuan, China)

under the supervision of Prof. Dr Dick de Jongh, and submitted to the Board of Examiners in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree
of

## MSc in Logic

at the Universiteit van Amsterdam.

Date of the public defense: Members of the Thesis Committee: August 25, 2008

Prof. Dr Johan van Benthem
Prof. Dr Peter van Emde Boas
Dr Lex Hendriks
Prof. Dr Dick de Jongh
Dr Yde Venema
Prof. Dr Albert Visser


Institute for Logic, Language and Computation

## Contents

1 Introduction ..... 4
2 Preliminaries ..... 6
2.1 Intuitionistic logic ..... 6
2.2 Kripke semantics ..... 7
2.3 Operations on Kripke frames and Kripke models ..... 8
2.4 Algebraic semantics ..... 11
2.5 Topological semantics ..... 11
2.6 The connection of descriptive frames with Heyting algebra and Heyting spaces ..... 12
2.6.1 Descriptive frames and Heyting algebras ..... 12
2.6.2 Descriptive frames and Heyting spaces ..... 15
2.6.3 Heyting algebras and Heyting spaces ..... 16
2.6.4 Duality of categories $\mathbb{D E}, \mathbb{H} \mathbb{A}$ and $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{S}$ ..... 16
2.7 The variety of Heyting algebras ..... 17
2.7.1 $\mathbf{H S}=\mathbf{S H}$ ..... 17
2.7.2 Heyting algebras and intermediate logics ..... 18
2.7.3 Free Heyting algebras ..... 18
3 n-universal models of IPC ..... 20
$3.1 n$-universal models of IPC ..... 20
$3.2 n$-universal models and $n$-Henkin models ..... 23
3.3 Some properties of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ and $\mathcal{H}(n)$ ..... 32
3.4 An alternative proof of Jankov's Theorem on KC ..... 36
4 Subframe logics and subframe formulas ..... 46
4.1 Subframe logics ..... 47
4.2 Subframe formulas ..... 48
$4.3 \quad[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas ..... 48
4.4 Equivalent characterizations of subframe logics ..... 51
5 The [ $\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC ..... 52
$5.1 n$-universal models of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas ..... 53
5.2 Brouwerian semilattices ..... 64
6 NNIL-formulas ..... 67
6.1 NNIL-formulas ..... 68
6.2 NNIL-formulas and subsimulations ..... 72
6.3 NNIL-formulas and $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas ..... 73
6.4 Equivalence of models under subsimulations ..... 77
$6.5 n$-universal models of $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas ..... 86
$6.6 \mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ and the subframe logics axiomatized by $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)-$ formulas ..... 97

## Acknowledgements

First of all, I would like to express my sincere thanks and appreciation to my supervisor Prof. Dr Dick de Jongh, who is and will always be the model of my scientific life. I thank him for all the insightful conversations, comments and countless emails about intuitionistic logic. I thank him for his careful advising on my two master projects on intuitionistic descriptive frames, which finally led me to the topic of this thesis. I thank him for kindly arranging many important discussions with and introducing me to various people related to the areas of this thesis. Without his unbelievable patience and careful guidance, I wouldn't be able to finish this thesis. His never losing hope in the most difficult period of my thesis writing will always encourage me in my future research. I did enjoy very much and learned plenty in all the fruitful weekly discussions we had during these two years in front of the blackboards or whiteboards in room 114, 313, 314, 327, the coffee corner of the third floor and other rooms in the Euclides Building. I thank him very much for showing me the beauties of intuitionistic logic, mathematical logic and the scientific life.

As also my study mentor, he was always available and willing to help me in any case. I thank him for his trying his best to help me with the applications for the scholarships of these two years, which made my stay in Amsterdam possible. I thank him for providing all kinds of opportunities that may help me to make progress including recommending me to present works in related workshops and conferences. I thank him for arranging try-outs of almost all my public presentations, which helped me to present scientific research professionally. I thank him especially for the careful English corrections of all kinds of texts of mine including even emails. As a student, these were all the best things she could have ever wished her teacher to do for her. I will always remember his unreserved help with everything I asked or even didn't ask for.

I am also very grateful to Nick Bezhanishvili for inspiring the topic of my thesis. I had been reading and gaining nourishment on intuitionistic logic from his PhD dissertation during my entire master. The discussion we had in April 2008 helped me to write up Chapter 3 and 4. I thank him also for important suggestions and comments of my two master projects on intuitionistic descriptive frames.

Great appreciation goes to Lex Hendriks for introducing exact models of fragments of intuitionistic logic to me. Without his work on exact models in his PhD dissertation and our discussions in July 2008, I wouldn't be able to finish Section 3.4, Chapter 5 and Chapter 6. I thank him for all the detailed and very helpful emails he had sent to me concerning my questions.

I thank Guram Bezhanishvili for his extremely clear explanation of subframe logics and their finite model properties. During his stay in Amsterdam in April 2008, I learned more than a lot on the algebraic characterization of intuitionistic logic from our discussions.

I thank Albert Visser and Rosalie Iemhoff for the very interesting and helpful discussion on NNIL-formulas and subsimulations in Utrecht in April 2008.

I thank Raul Leal Rodriguez for helping me to improve my topology background. His excellent "private" weekly teaching and kind exercise checking during October-December 2007 showed me the wonderful world of topology. This finally helped me to understand topological method used in the study of intuitionistic subframe logics. I am indebted to him for the friendship and the unusual teacher-student relationship.

I thank Yde Venema for pointing out a mistake in the proof of Lemma 3.2.10. I thank Jacob Vosmaer for explaining a mistake I made in category theory. Special thanks to the following people for giving me constructive comments on the later versions of my thesis: Johan van Benthem, Nick Bezhanishivli, Peter van Emde Boas, Lex Hendriks, Albert Visser.

Last but not least, I would like to thank Prof. Dr Frank Veltman at the Institute of Logic, Language and Computation at the University of Amsterdam (Amsterdam, the Netherlands) and Prof. Dr Shier Ju at the Institute of Logic and Cognition at Sun Yat-sen University (Guangzhou, China) for setting up the lovely research tie between the two institutes, which was of significant help with my application for the master programme at the ILLC. I thank DELTA scholarship, Evert Willem Beth foundation, Heyting foundation, AMS scholarship, the ILLC in the Netherlands and the ILC in China for granting me various scholarships during my two-year master. I also thank

Johan van Benthem, Benedikt Löwe, Yde Venema and the BLAST committee for providing me financial supports for my trip to Denver, USA for the BLAST conference, where I had a precious opportunity to present the alternative proof of Jankov's theorem on KC in Section 3.4. Without all these financial supports, I wouldn't be able to come to the ILLC and enjoy the fantastic logic life in Amsterdam.

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

In this thesis, we investigate intuitionistic subframe formulas and NNILformulas by using the technique of $n$-universal models. Intuitionistic subframe formulas axiomatize subframe logics which are intermediate logics characterized by a class of frames closed under subframes. Zakharyaschev introduced in [27], [29] the subframe formulas by using $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas, which contain only $\wedge$ and $\rightarrow$ as connectives. It then follows that subframe logics are axiomatized by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas.

NNIL-formulas are the formulas that have no nesting of implications to the left. Visser, de Jongh, van Benthem and Renardel de Lavalette proved in [25] that NNIL-formulas are exactly the formulas preserved under taking submodels. The topic of this thesis was inspired by N. Bezhanishvili [3] who used the insight that NNIL-formulas are then preserved under subframes as well to introduce subframe formulas in the NNIL-form. It was proved in [3] that NNIL-formulas are sufficient to axiomatize subframe logics.

This thesis is set up in a way to be able to connect the results on subframe formulas defined by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas and NNIL-formulas by using $n$-universal models as a uniform method. Our original intention to throw new light on subframe logics by the use of NNIL-formulas was barely realized, but we do provide new insights on the NNIL-formulas themselves.

Chapter 2 gives a background on intuitionistic propositional logic and its Kripke, algebraic and topological semantics. In Chapter 3, we discuss $n$-universal models $\mathcal{U}(n)$ of IPC by giving proofs of known theorems in a uniform manner including a direct and very perspicuous proof of the fact that the $n$-universal model of IPC is isomorphic to the upper part of the $n$-Henkin model. This then also gives a method for a new proof (Theorem
3.4.9) of Jankov's theorem in [19] on KC. In Chapter 4, we summarize classic and recent results on subframe logics and subframe formulas. In Chapter 5, we investigate properties of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC consisting of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ formulas only. This chapter is based on the results in Diego [12], de Bruijn [7] and Hendriks [16]. We redefined the exact model defined in [16] by using the $n$-universal models of IPC and give a uniform treatment of known results.

In Chapter 6, we give an algorithm to translate every NNIL-formula to a $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formula in such a way that they are equivalent on frames. We study subsimulations between models and construct representative models for equivalence classes of rooted generated submodels of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ induced by two-way subsimulations. We construct finite $n$-universal models $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ for NNIL-formulas with $n$ variables by the representative models and prove the related properties. As a consequence, the theorem that formulas preserved under subsimulations are equivalent to NNIL-formulas proved in [25] becomes a natural corollary of the properties of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. Finally, we obtain the subframe logics axiomatized by two-variable NNIL-formulas by observing the structure of $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$. Although it is not yet clear how to generalize the result for the model $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ and the subframe logics axiomatized by $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formulas to the models $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ for any $n \in \omega$, this result clearly suggests that the $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ models are a good tool for future work on subframe logics.

## Chapter 2

## Preliminaries

### 2.1 Intuitionistic logic

The language of the intuitionistic propositional calculus (IPC) consists of propositional variables $p_{0}, p_{1}, \cdots$, logical connectives $\wedge, \vee, \rightarrow$ and a constant $\perp$. Formulas of IPC are constructed in the standard way. We write $\neg \varphi$, $\varphi \leftrightarrow \psi$ and $\top$ as abbreviations of $\varphi \rightarrow \perp,(\varphi \rightarrow \psi) \wedge(\psi \rightarrow \varphi)$ and $\neg \perp$. Denote by Form the set of all well-formed formulas. Symbols $\varphi, \psi, \chi, \cdots$ represent formulas and $\Gamma, \Delta, \Theta, \cdots$ represent sets of formulas. We write $\varphi(\vec{p})$ to indicate that the propositional variables of $\varphi$ are among $\vec{p}$, where $\vec{p}=\left(p_{0}, \cdots, p_{n}\right)$. We use $P V(\varphi)$ to denote the set of propositional variables that occur in $\varphi$. The set of all propositional variables of IPC is denoted by Prop.

The Intuitionistic propositional calculus IPC is the smallest set of formulas that contains the axioms:

1. $p \rightarrow(q \rightarrow p)$,
2. $(p \rightarrow(q \rightarrow r)) \rightarrow((p \rightarrow q) \rightarrow(p \rightarrow r))$,
3. $p \wedge q \rightarrow p, p \wedge q \rightarrow q$
4. $p \rightarrow p \vee q, q \rightarrow p \vee q$,
5. $p \rightarrow(q \rightarrow(p \wedge q))$,
6. $(p \rightarrow r) \rightarrow((q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow(p \vee q \rightarrow r))$,
7. $\perp \rightarrow p$.
and is closed under the inference rules Modus Ponens (MP):

$$
\frac{\varphi, \varphi \rightarrow \psi}{\psi}
$$

and Substitution (Sub):

$$
\frac{\varphi\left(p_{0}, \cdots, p_{n}\right)}{\varphi\left(\psi_{0}, \cdots, \psi_{n}\right)}
$$

If $\varphi \in$ IPC, then we write $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$ (or simply $\vdash \varphi$ if it causes no confusion) and say that $\varphi$ is a theorem of IPC. A theory $T$ is a set of sentences with the property $T \vdash \varphi \Rightarrow \varphi \in T$. Let $T h(\Gamma)=\{\varphi: \Gamma \vdash \varphi\}$ and call it a theory of $\Gamma$. If $\Gamma=\{\varphi\}$ a singleton, then we will write $\operatorname{Th}(\varphi)$ instead of $T h(\Gamma)$.

Let CPC denote the classical propositional calculus. A set of formulas $L$ closed under MP and Sub is called an intermediate logic if IPC $\subseteq L \subseteq$ CPC.

### 2.2 Kripke semantics

Definition 2.2.1. An intuitionistic Kripke frame is a pair $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ consisting of a nonempty set $W$ and a partial order $R$ on $W$.

In a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{F}$, if $w R v$, then $v$ is called a successor of $w$. If in addition there is no other point $u \in W$ such that $w R u$ and $u R v$, then $v$ is called an immediate successor of $w$. Denote the set of all immediate successors of $w$ by $S_{w}$. The depth $d(w) \in[1,+\infty)$ of a point $w$ is defined as usual. The depth of a frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle d(\mathfrak{F})$ is defined as $d(\mathfrak{F})=\max \{d(w)$ : $w \in W\}$. For any point $w$ in $\mathfrak{F}$, we define

$$
\begin{gathered}
R(w)=\{v \in W: w R v\} \\
R^{-1}(w)=\{v \in W: v R w\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

We sometimes also write $w \uparrow$ and $w \downarrow$ instead of $R(w)$ and $R^{-1}(w)$, respectively. An endpoint $w$ is a point with $R(w)=\{w\}$ and has depth 1 .

Definition 2.2.2. An intuitionistic Kripke model is a triple $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ such that $\langle W, R\rangle$ is an intuitionistic Kripke frame, and $V$ is an intuitionistic
valuation, which is a partial map $V: \operatorname{PrOP} \rightarrow \wp(W)$ satisfying the persistence condition: if $w \in V(p)$ and $w R v$, then $v \in V(p)$. Usually $V$ is used as a total map. We call a model $\mathfrak{M}$ an $n$-model if $\operatorname{dom}(V)=\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}$.
$\mathfrak{M}$ is also called a model on the frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$.
Let $w$ be a point in a Kripke model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. We inductively define a relation $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$ as follows:

- $\mathfrak{M}, w \models p$ iff $w \in V(p)$;
- $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi \wedge \psi$ iff $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \psi$;
- $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi \vee \psi$ iff $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$ or $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \psi$;
- $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi \rightarrow \psi$ iff for all $v \in W$ such that $w R v, \mathfrak{M}, v \models \varphi$ implies $\mathfrak{M}, v \vDash \psi ;$
- $\mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash \perp$.

If $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$, we say that " $\varphi$ is true at $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}$ " or " $\varphi$ is satisfied at $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}$ ". If $\varphi$ is true at every point $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, we write $\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi$ and say that " $\varphi$ is true in $\mathfrak{M}$ " or " $\mathfrak{M}$ is a model of $\varphi$ ". If $\varphi$ is true in every model on $\mathfrak{F}$, we write $\mathfrak{F}=\varphi$ and say that " $\varphi$ is valid in $\mathfrak{F}$ " or " $\mathfrak{F}$ is a frame of $\varphi$ ".

The $n$-canonical model (or $n$-Henkin model) of IPC is the model $\mathcal{H}(n)=$ $\left\langle W^{c}, \subseteq, V^{c}\right\rangle$, where $W^{c}$ is the set of all consistent theories with the disjunction property, and $V^{c}$ is defined by $\Gamma \in V^{c}(p)$ iff $p \in \Gamma$.

Many of the Kripke frames considered in the thesis will be rooted frames, i.e. frames that have least nodes, roots. For proofs of the following two theorems, see e.g. [6], [15].

Theorem 2.2.3. IPC is sound and complete with respect to the class of all rooted Kripke frames.

Theorem 2.2.4. IPC has the finite model property.

### 2.3 Operations on Kripke frames and Kripke models

There are three truth-preserving operators on Kripke models and they all have their corresponding operations on Kripke frames.

Definition 2.3.1. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ be a frame. A set $V \subseteq W$ is called an upward closed subset or an upset, if for every $w \in V$ and $v \in W, w R v$ implies $v \in V$. Denote the set of all upsets in $\mathfrak{F}$ by $U p(\mathfrak{F})$.
Definition 2.3.2. A Kripke frame $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S\rangle$ is called a subframe of a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ if $V \subseteq W$ and $S$ is the restriction of $R$ to $V$ ( $S=R \upharpoonright V$, in symbols), i.e., $S=R \cap V^{2}$. The subframe $\mathfrak{G}$ is a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{F}$ if $V$ is an upward closed subset of $W$.
Definition 2.3.3. A Kripke model $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is called a submodel of a Kripke model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ if $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is a subframe of $\langle W, R\rangle$ and $V^{\prime}=V \upharpoonright W^{\prime}$, i.e. $V^{\prime}(p)=V(p) \cap W^{\prime}$ for every propositional variable $p . \mathfrak{N}$ is called a generated submodel of $\mathfrak{M}$ if $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is a generated subframe of $\langle W, R\rangle$ and $V^{\prime}=V \upharpoonright W^{\prime}$.

Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a Kripke model, $X$ be a subset of $W$. We denote the submodel of $\mathfrak{M}$ generated by $X$ by $\mathfrak{M}_{X}$. In the case that $X=\{w\}$, we will only write $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ for the rooted model generated by $w \in W$.
Definition 2.3.4. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S\rangle$ be two Kripke frames. A map $f$ from $W$ to $V$ is called a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{F}$ to $\mathfrak{G}$ if it satisfies the following conditions:
(R1) For any $w, u \in W, w R u$ implies $f(w) S f(u)$;
(R2) $f(w) S v^{\prime}$ implies $\exists v \in W\left(w R v \wedge f(v)=v^{\prime}\right)$.
A surjective p-morphism on frames is also called a reduction. If there is a surjective p-morphism from $\mathfrak{F}$ to $\mathfrak{G}$, then we say that $\mathfrak{F}$ is reducible to $\mathfrak{G}$, and call $\mathfrak{G}$ a p-morphic image or a reduct of $\mathfrak{F}$.
Definition 2.3.5. A p-morphism $f$ of $\mathfrak{F}$ to $\mathfrak{G}$ is called a p-morphism of a model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ to a model $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle\mathfrak{G}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ if for every $p \in \operatorname{Prop}, w \in W$,
(R0) $w \in V(p) \Longleftrightarrow f(w) \in V^{\prime}(p)$.
Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ be a Kripke frame.

- Assume $w, v$ are points in $W$ such that $R(w)=R(v) \cup\{w\}$. Define a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{G}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}\right\rangle$ by taking $W^{\prime}=W \backslash\{w\}, R^{\prime}=R \upharpoonright W^{\prime}$. Define a map $\alpha: W \rightarrow W^{\prime}$ by taking

$$
\alpha(x)= \begin{cases}x, & x \neq w \\ v, & x=w .\end{cases}
$$

Then $\alpha$ is a p-morphism. We call a function like $\alpha$ an $\alpha$-reduction.

- Assume $w, v$ are points in $W$ such that $R(w) \backslash\{w\}=R(v) \backslash\{v\}$. Define a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{G}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}\right\rangle$ by taking $W^{\prime}=W \backslash\{w\}, R^{\prime}=$ $R \upharpoonright W^{\prime} \cup\{(x, v):(x, w) \in R\}$. Define a map $\beta: W \rightarrow W^{\prime}$ by taking

$$
\beta(x)= \begin{cases}x, & x \neq w \\ v, & x=w .\end{cases}
$$

Then $\beta$ is a p -morphism. We call a function like $\beta$ a $\beta$-reduction.
The next theorem was first proved in [8].
Theorem 2.3.6. If $f$ is a proper p-morphism of $\mathfrak{F}$ onto $\mathfrak{G}$, then there exists a sequence $f_{1}, \cdots, f_{n}$ of $\alpha$ - and $\beta$-reductions such that $f=f_{1} \circ \cdots \circ f_{n}$.

Definition 2.3.7. Let $\left\{\mathfrak{F}_{i}=\left\langle W_{i}, R_{i}\right\rangle: i \in I\right\}$ be a family of Kripke frames such that $W_{i} \cap W_{j}=\emptyset$ for all $i \neq j$. The disjoint union of the family $\left\{\mathfrak{F}_{i}: i \in I\right\}$ is the frame $\biguplus_{i \in I} \mathfrak{F}_{i}=\left\langle\bigcup_{i \in I} W_{i}, \bigcup_{i \in I} R_{i}\right\rangle$.

Definition 2.3.8. Let $\left\{\mathfrak{M}_{i}=\left\langle\mathfrak{F}_{i}, V_{i}\right\rangle: i \in I\right\}$ be a family of disjoint Kripke models. The disjoint union of the family $\left\{\mathfrak{M}_{i}: i \in I\right\}$ is the model $\biguplus_{i \in I} \mathfrak{M}_{i}=$ $\left\langle\biguplus_{i \in I} \mathfrak{F}_{i}, \bigcup_{i \in I} V_{i}\right\rangle$.

The following theorem shows that the three operations on Kripke models are truth preserving. For a proof, see e.g. [6].

## Theorem 2.3.9.

- If $\mathfrak{N}$ is a generated submodel of $\mathfrak{M}$, then for every point $w$ in $\mathfrak{N}$ and every formula $\varphi$,

$$
\mathfrak{N}, w \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi
$$

- If $f$ is a p-morphism of a model $\mathfrak{M}$ to a model $\mathfrak{N}$, then for every point $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}$ and every formula $\varphi$,

$$
\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{N}, f(w) \models \varphi
$$

- If $w_{i}$ is a point in $\mathfrak{M}_{i}$ for $i \in I$ and every formula $\varphi$,

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{i}, w_{i} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \biguplus_{i \in I} \mathfrak{M}_{i}, w_{i} \models \varphi
$$

### 2.4 Algebraic semantics

Definition 2.4.1. A Heyting algebra $\mathfrak{A}=\langle A, \vee, \wedge, \rightarrow, 0\rangle$ is a distributive lattice $\langle A, \vee, \wedge, 0\rangle$ with a binary operator $\rightarrow$, a Heyting implication, defined as:

$$
c \leq a \rightarrow b \text { iff } a \wedge c \leq b
$$

Let $\mathfrak{A}$ be a Heyting algebra. A function $v: \operatorname{Prop} \rightarrow A$ is called a Heyting valuation. It can be extended in the standard way from Prop to Form. We say a formula $\varphi$ is true in $\mathfrak{A}$ under $v$, if $v(\varphi)=1 ; \varphi$ is valid in $\mathfrak{A}$, if $\varphi$ is true under every valuation in $\mathfrak{A}$.

For a proof of the following theorem, see e.g. [6].
Theorem 2.4.2. $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$ iff $\varphi$ is valid in every Heyting algebra.

### 2.5 Topological semantics

Definition 2.5.1. A topological space is a pair $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau\rangle$, where $X \neq \emptyset$ and $\tau$ is a collection of subsets of $X$ satisfying:

- $\emptyset, X \in \tau ;$
- if $U, V \in \tau$, then $U \cap V \in \tau$;
- if $\left\{U_{i}\right\}_{i \in I} \subseteq \tau$, then $\bigcup_{i \in I} U_{i} \in \tau$.

Elements of $\tau$ are called open sets. $U$ is called a closed set if $X \backslash U$ is open. A subset which is both closed and open is called a clopen set. Denote the set of all clopens of $X$ by $\mathcal{C O}(X)$.

Let Int denote the interior operator of $\mathcal{X}$. A function $v: \operatorname{Prop} \rightarrow \tau$ is called a valuation. It can be extended from Prop to Form as follows:

- $v(\varphi \wedge \psi)=v(\varphi) \cap v(\psi)$;
- $v(\varphi \vee \psi)=v(\varphi) \cup v(\psi)$;
- $v(\perp)=\emptyset$;
- $v(\varphi \rightarrow \psi)=\operatorname{Int}((X \backslash v(\varphi)) \cup v(\psi))$.

Note that $v(\varphi) \in \tau$ for every $\varphi$. We say a formula $\varphi$ is true in $\mathcal{X}$ under $\nu$, if $v(\varphi)=X ; \varphi$ is valid in $\mathcal{X}$, if $\varphi$ is true under every valuation in $\mathcal{X}$.

For a proof of the following theorem, see e.g. [21].
Theorem 2.5.2. $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$ iff $\varphi$ is valid in every topological space.

### 2.6 The connection of descriptive frames with Heyting algebra and Heyting spaces

### 2.6.1 Descriptive frames and Heyting algebras

Definition 2.6.1. An intuitionistic general frame is a triple $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, where $\langle W, R\rangle$ is a Kripke frame and $\mathcal{P}$ is a family of upsets containing $\emptyset$ and closed under $\cap, \cup$ and the following operation $\supset$ : for every $X, Y \subseteq W$,

$$
X \supset Y=\{x \in W: \forall y \in W(x R y \wedge y \in X \rightarrow y \in Y)\}
$$

Elements of the set $\mathcal{P}$ are called admissible sets.
General frames and Heyting algebras have a close connection. For proofs of the following two theorems, see e.g. [6].

Theorem 2.6.2. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a general frame. The algebra $\langle\mathcal{P}, \cap, \cup$, , $\emptyset$ is a Heyting algebra and is called the dual of $\mathfrak{F}$, denoted by $\mathfrak{F}^{+}$.

Theorem 2.6.3. Let $\mathfrak{A}$ be a Heyting algebra, define $\mathfrak{A}_{+}=\left\langle W_{\mathfrak{A}}, R_{\mathfrak{A}}, \mathcal{P}_{\mathfrak{A}}\right\rangle$ as follows:
(i) $W_{\mathfrak{A}}=\{\nabla \subseteq A: \nabla$ is a prime filter of $\mathfrak{A}\}$,
(ii) $\nabla_{1} R_{\mathfrak{A}} \nabla_{2}$ iff $\nabla_{1} \subseteq \nabla_{2}$,
(iii) $\mathcal{P}_{\mathfrak{A}}=\{\hat{a}: a \in A\}$, where $\hat{a}=\left\{\nabla \in W_{\mathfrak{A}}: a \in \nabla\right\}$.

Then $\mathfrak{A}_{+}$is a general frame called the dual of $\mathfrak{A}$. Furthermore, $\mathfrak{A} \cong\left(\mathfrak{A}_{+}\right)^{+}=$ $\left\langle\mathcal{P}_{\mathfrak{A}}, \cap, \cup, \supset, \emptyset\right\rangle$.

The preceding theorem means that by applying the two operators ( ) $+_{+}$ and ()$^{+}$consecutively, one can go from a Heyting algebra through a general frame and then back to itself. However, in general, for any general frame $\mathfrak{F}$, it is not necessary that $\left(\mathfrak{F}^{+}\right)_{+} \cong \mathfrak{F}$. So we have the following definition.

Definition 2.6.4. A descriptive frame $\mathfrak{F}$ is a general frame satisfying $\left(\mathfrak{F}^{+}\right)_{+} \cong$ $\mathfrak{F}$.

Descriptive frames can also be defined frame-theoretically.
Definition 2.6.5. An intuitionistic general frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is called refined if for any $x, y \in W$,

$$
\forall X \in \mathcal{P}(x \in X \rightarrow y \in X) \Rightarrow x R y
$$

or equivalently,

$$
\neg x R y \Rightarrow \exists X \in \mathcal{P}(x \in X \wedge y \notin X)
$$

Definition 2.6.6. A family $\mathcal{X}$ of sets has the finite intersection property if every finite subfamily $\mathcal{X}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathcal{X}$ has a nonempty intersection, i.e., $\bigcap \mathcal{X}^{\prime} \neq \emptyset$.

Definition 2.6.7. An intuitionistic general frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is called compact, if for any families $\mathcal{X} \subseteq \mathcal{P}$ and $\mathcal{Y} \subseteq \overline{\mathcal{P}}=\{W-X: X \in \mathcal{P}\}$ for which $\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}$ has the finite intersection property, $\bigcap(\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}) \neq \emptyset$.

For a proof of the next theorem, see e.g. [6].
Theorem 2.6.8. An intuitionistic general frame $\mathfrak{F}$ is a descriptive frame iff it is refined and compact.

The three truth-preserving operators on Kripke frames can be generalized to descriptive frames case.

Definition 2.6.9. A descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S, \mathcal{Q}\rangle$ is called a generated subframe of a descriptive frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ if it satisfies the following conditions:
(S1) $\langle V, S\rangle$ is a generated subframe of $\langle W, R\rangle$,
(S2) $\mathcal{Q}=\{U \cap V: U \in \mathcal{P}\}$.
Definition 2.6.10. Given descriptive frames $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S, \mathcal{Q}\rangle$, we call a surjective p-morphism $f$ of $\langle W, R\rangle$ onto $\langle V, S\rangle$ a surjective $p$ morphism (or a reduction) of $\mathfrak{F}$ onto $\mathfrak{G}$, if it also satisfies the following condition:
(R3) $\forall X \in \mathcal{Q}, f^{-1}(X) \in \mathcal{P}$.

Definition 2.6.11. Let $\left\{\mathfrak{F}_{i}=\left\langle W_{i}, R_{i}, \mathcal{P}_{i}\right\rangle\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ be a finite family of disjoint descriptive frames. The disjoint union of the family $\left\{\mathfrak{F}_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ is the frame $\biguplus_{i=1}^{n} \mathfrak{F}_{i}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, where $\langle W, R\rangle=\biguplus_{i=1}^{n}\left\langle W_{i}, R_{i}\right\rangle$ and $\mathcal{P}=\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} \mathcal{P}_{i}$.

The following theorem is well-known. For a proof, see e.g. [6].
Theorem 2.6.12. Let $\mathfrak{A}$ and $\mathfrak{B}$ be Heyting algebras, and $\mathfrak{F}$ and $\mathfrak{G}$ descriptive frames. Then

1. (a) $\mathfrak{A}$ is a homomorphic image of $\mathfrak{B}$ iff $\mathfrak{A}_{+}$is isomorphic to a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{B}_{+}$;
(b) $\mathfrak{A}$ is isomorphic to a subalgebra of $\mathfrak{B}$ iff $\mathfrak{A}_{+}$is a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{B}_{+}$;
(c) $\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathfrak{A}_{i}\right)_{+}$is isomorphic to the disjoint union $\biguplus_{i=1}^{n}\left(\mathfrak{A}_{i}\right)_{+}$;
2. (a) $\mathfrak{F}$ is isomorphic to a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$ iff $\mathfrak{F}^{+}$is a homomorphic image of $\mathfrak{G}^{+}$;
(b) $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{G}$ iff $\mathfrak{F}^{+}$is isomorphic to a subalgebra of $\mathfrak{G}^{+}$;
(c) $\left(\biguplus_{i=1}^{n} \mathfrak{F}_{i}\right)^{+}$is isomorphic to $\prod_{i=1}^{n} \mathfrak{F}_{i}^{+}$.

Given any descriptive frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, it is not necessary that the general frame generated by any subset of $W$ is descriptive (for more details, see [26]). However, admissible subsets do generate descriptive frames.

Lemma 2.6.13. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a descriptive frame. A general frame $\mathfrak{G}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ generated by an admissible subset of $\mathfrak{F}$ is descriptive.

Proof. It suffices to show that $\mathfrak{G}$ is refined and compact. For refinedness, suppose $\neg w R^{\prime} v$ for some $w, v \in W^{\prime}$. Since $\mathcal{P}$ is refined, there exists $U \in \mathcal{P}$ such that $w \in U$ and $v \notin U$. Let $U^{\prime}=U \cap W^{\prime}$. Then by (S2), $U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$. And we have $w \in U^{\prime}$ and $v \notin U^{\prime}$.

For compactness, for any families $\mathcal{X} \subseteq \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ and $\mathcal{Y} \subseteq \overline{\mathcal{P}^{\prime}}=\left\{W^{\prime} \backslash U^{\prime}: U^{\prime} \in\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\}$, suppose $\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}$ has the finite intersection property.

Note that since $W^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}$, we have that $\mathcal{X} \subseteq \mathcal{P}^{\prime} \subseteq \mathcal{P}$. Define

$$
\mathcal{Y}^{*}=\left\{W \backslash U^{\prime}: U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}^{\prime}, W^{\prime} \backslash U^{\prime} \in \mathcal{Y}\right\} \subseteq \overline{\mathcal{P}} .
$$

Take any $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n} \in \mathcal{X}$, and $Y_{1}^{*}, \ldots, Y_{k}^{*} \in \mathcal{Y}^{*}$. We know that $X_{i}=$ $X_{i} \cap W^{\prime}$ for all $1 \leq i \leq n$, and there exist $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{k} \in \mathcal{Y}$ such that

$$
Y_{j}=Y_{j}^{*} \cap W^{\prime}(1 \leq j \leq k)
$$

Observe that


So, the fact that $\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}$ has the finite intersection property implies that $\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}^{*}$ has the finite intersection property.

Similarly, we also have that

$$
\bigcap(\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y})=\bigcap \mathcal{X} \cap \bigcap \mathcal{Y}=\bigcap \mathcal{X} \cap \bigcap \mathcal{Y}^{*}=\bigcap\left(\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}^{*}\right)
$$

Thus, by the compactness of $\mathfrak{F}$, it holds that $\bigcap\left(\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}^{*}\right) \neq \emptyset$, from which it follows that $\bigcap(\mathcal{X} \cup \mathcal{Y}) \neq \emptyset$.

### 2.6.2 Descriptive frames and Heyting spaces

Definition 2.6.14. A Heyting space is a triple $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$, where $\langle X, \tau\rangle$ is a Stone space, and $R$ is a partial order on $X$ such that

- for each $x \in X, R(x)$ is closed;
- for each $U \in \mathcal{C O}(X), R^{-1}(U) \in \mathcal{C O}(X)$.

The following two theorems follow from [13].
Theorem 2.6.15. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a descriptive frame. Let $\tau_{\mathcal{P}}$ be the topology generated by the sub-basis $\mathcal{P} \cup \overline{\mathcal{P}}$, where

$$
\overline{\mathcal{P}}=\{W \backslash U: U \in \mathcal{P}\}
$$

Then $\mathcal{X}=\left\langle W, \tau_{\mathcal{P}}, R\right\rangle$ is a Heyting spaces.
Theorem 2.6.16. Let $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$ be a Heyting space. Define

$$
\mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{X}}=\{U \subseteq X: U \text { is a clopen upset }\} .
$$

Then $\mathfrak{F}=\left\langle X, R, \mathcal{P}_{\mathcal{X}}\right\rangle$ is a descriptive frame.

In this connection, we can define the topological counterparts of the three truth-preserving operators of descriptive frames. Let $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$ and $\mathcal{Y}=\langle Y, \nu, S\rangle$ be Heyting spaces.

Definition 2.6.17. $\mathcal{Y}$ is called a generated subframe of $\mathcal{X}$ if $\langle Y, \nu, S\rangle$ is a generated subframe of $\langle X, R\rangle$ and $\langle Y, \nu\rangle$ is a closed subspace of $\langle X, \tau\rangle$.

Definition 2.6.18. A map $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is called a continuous $p$-morphism of $\mathcal{X}$ to $\mathcal{Y}$ if $f$ is continuous and a p-morphism of $\langle X, R\rangle$ to $\langle Y, S\rangle$.

Definition 2.6.19. Let $\left\{\mathcal{X}_{i}=\left\langle X_{i}, \tau_{i}, R_{i}\right\rangle\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ be a family of disjoint Heyting spaces. The disjoint union of the family $\left\{\mathcal{X}_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ is the frame $\biguplus_{i \in I} \mathcal{X}_{i}=$ $\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$, where $\langle X, R\rangle=\biguplus_{i=1}^{n}\left\langle X_{i}, R_{i}\right\rangle$ and $\langle X, \tau\rangle=\bigoplus_{i=1}^{n}\left\langle X_{i}, \tau_{i}\right\rangle$ (the topological sum)

### 2.6.3 Heyting algebras and Heyting spaces

For proofs of the following two theorems, see [13].
Theorem 2.6.20. Let $\mathfrak{A}=\langle A, \vee, \wedge, \rightarrow, 0\rangle$ be a Heyting algebra. Let $X_{\mathfrak{A}}$ be the set of all prime filters of $\mathfrak{A}$, and $\tau_{\mathfrak{A}}$ be a topology generated by the basis $\{\hat{a}, A \backslash \hat{a}\}_{a \in A}$, where

$$
\hat{a}=\left\{\nabla \in X_{\mathfrak{A}}: a \in \nabla\right\} .
$$

Then $\mathcal{X}=\left\langle X_{\mathfrak{A}}, \tau_{\mathfrak{A}}, \subseteq\right\rangle$ is a Heyting space.
Theorem 2.6.21. Let $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$ be a Heyting space. The algebra $\langle\mathcal{C O}(X), \cup, \cap, \rightarrow, \emptyset\rangle$ is a Heyting algebra, where $\rightarrow$ is defined as

$$
U \rightarrow V=X \backslash R^{-1}(U \backslash V) .
$$

### 2.6.4 Duality of categories $\mathbb{D F}, \mathbb{H} \mathbb{A}$ and $\mathbb{H S}$

Let

- $\mathbb{D F}$ be the category of descriptive frames and descriptive p-morphisms;
- $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{A}$ be the category of Heyting algebras and Heyting homomorphisms;
- $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{S}$ be the category of Heyting spaces and continuous p-morphisms.

Theorem 2.6.22. $\mathbb{D F}$ is dually equivalent to $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{A}$, and $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{S}$ is dually equivalent to $\mathbb{H} \mathbb{A}$.

### 2.7 The variety of Heyting algebras

### 2.7.1 $\mathrm{HS}=\mathrm{SH}$

Definition 2.7.1. A nonempty class $K$ of algebras is called a variety if it is closed under subalgebras, homomorphic images and direct products.

For any class $K$ of algebras, let $\mathbf{V}(K)$ denote the smallest variety containing $K$. And let $\mathbf{S}(K), \mathbf{H}(K)$ and $\mathbf{P}(K)$ denote the smallest class containing $K$ which is closed under subalgebras, homomorphic images and direct products respectively.

Theorem 2.7.2. V = HSP .
Theorem 2.7.3. The class of all Heyting algebras forms a variety HA.
HA has the property that $\mathbf{H S}=\mathbf{S H}$, which follows from the congruence extension property of HA.

Definition 2.7.4. We say an algebra $\mathfrak{A}$ has the congruence extension property (CEP) if for every subalgebra $\mathfrak{B}$ of $\mathfrak{A}$, and every $\theta \in$ Con $\mathfrak{B}$ (Con $\mathfrak{B}$ : the set of all congruences of $\mathfrak{B}$ ), there is a $\varphi \in \operatorname{Con} \mathfrak{A}$ such that $\theta=\varphi \cap B^{2}$. A variety $V$ has the CEP if every algebra in $V$ has the CEP.

Definition 2.7.5. Let $f: \mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{B}$ be a homomorphism. Then the kernel of $f, \operatorname{ker}(f)$, is defined by

$$
\operatorname{ker}(f)=\left\{(a, b) \in A^{2}: f(a)=f(b)\right\}
$$

For a proof of the following theorem see e.g. [1].
Theorem 2.7.6. The variety of Heyting algebras HA has the congruence extension property.

Theorem 2.7.7. If a variety $V$ has the $\boldsymbol{C E P}$, then for any $K \subseteq V, \mathbf{H S}(K)=$ $\mathbf{S H}(K)$.

Proof. It suffices to show that $\mathbf{H S}(K) \subseteq \mathbf{S H}(K)$. For any $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{H S}(K)$, there exist $\mathfrak{B}, \mathfrak{C} \in K$ such that $\mathfrak{C}$ is a subalgebra of $\mathfrak{B}$ and there exists surjective homomorphism $f: \mathfrak{C} \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$. Note that $\operatorname{ker}(f) \in \operatorname{Con} \mathfrak{C}$. By the congruence extension property, there exists $\theta \in C$ on $\mathfrak{B}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{ker}(f)=\theta \cap C^{2} . \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from $\mathfrak{C} \in \mathbf{S}(\mathfrak{B})$ and (2.1) that

$$
\mathfrak{C} / \operatorname{ker} f=\mathfrak{C} / \theta=\left\{[c]_{\theta}: c \in C\right\} .
$$

By the Homomorphism Theorem we have that $\mathfrak{A} \cong \mathfrak{C} / \operatorname{ker}(f)$. Consider the set $\mathfrak{B} / \theta=\left\{[b]_{\theta}: b \in B\right\}$. We have that $\mathfrak{C} / \operatorname{ker}(f) \in \mathbf{S}(\mathfrak{B} / \theta)$. Together with the fact that $\mathfrak{B} / \theta \in \mathbf{H}(\mathfrak{B})$, we obtain $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{S H}(K)$.

Corollary 2.7.8. For any Heyting algebra $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{H A}, \mathbf{H S}(\mathfrak{A})=\mathbf{S H}(\mathfrak{A})$.
By the duality result, we have the following corollary.
Corollary 2.7.9. A descriptive frame $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of a descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$ iff $\mathfrak{F}$ is a generated subframe of a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{G}$.

### 2.7.2 Heyting algebras and intermediate logics

For every intermediate logic $L$, since the three operators $\mathbf{H}, \mathbf{S}$ and $\mathbf{P}$ are truth-preserving, the class of all Heyting algebras that validates $L$ forms a variety. We have the following theorem in universal algebra. For a proof, see e.g. [5].

Theorem 2.7.10. Every variety of algebras is generated by its finitely generated subdirectly irreducible algebras.

Note that by the duality theorems in the preceding sections, subdirectly irreducible Heyting algebras correspond to rooted descriptive frames. Thus, the above theorem gives the following corollary in the descriptive frames context.

Corollary 2.7.11. Every intermediate logic is complete with respect to finitely generated rooted descriptive frames.

### 2.7.3 Free Heyting algebras

Definition 2.7.12. Given a variety $V$ of algebras and a set $X$, the free algebra in $V$ generated by $X \subseteq F(X)$ is the algebra $\mathbf{F}_{V}(X)$ satisfying for any $\mathfrak{A} \in V$, any map $f: X \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$ can be extended uniquely to a homomorphism $\bar{f}: \mathbf{F}(X) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$.

If $|X|=|Y|$, then $\mathbf{F}_{V}(X) \cong \mathbf{F}_{V}(Y)$ (see e.g. [5]). So we will only speak of the free algebra in $V$ on a certain number of generators and denote such a free algebra by $\mathbf{F}_{V}(n)$ if the cardinality of the set of generators is $n$. The $n$-generated free Heyting algebra is then denoted by $\mathbf{F}_{\mathbf{H A}}(n)$ or $\mathbf{F}(n)$ for short.

## Chapter 3

## $n$-universal models of IPC

In this chapter, we discuss $n$-universal models $\mathcal{U}(n)$ of IPC. The descriptive frame $\mathbf{F}(n)_{+}$dual to the $n$-generated free Heyting algebra $\mathbf{F}(n)$ is isomorphic to the $n$-Henkin frame $\mathcal{H}(n)$. The upper part of $\mathcal{H}(n)$ is usually called the $n$-universal model.

In Section 3.1, we recall the definition of $n$-universal models by giving a more mathematical definition than the one in [3]. N. Bezhanishvili gave in [3] an algebraic proof of the fact that the upper part of $\mathcal{H}(n)$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{U}(n)$. In Section 3.2, we prove it directly from a model-theoretic point of view. In Section 3.3, we prove that $\mathcal{H}(n)$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)$ are "connected" in the sense that every infinite upset of $\mathcal{H}(n)$ has an infinite intersection in $\mathcal{U}(n)$. As a preparation of this result, we give a frame-based new proof of Jankov's theorem in [18]. The proof uses the de Jongh formulas and the idea of the proof is inspired by the algebraic proof in de Jongh [8]. It then turns out that the idea of this proof can be generalized to prove Jankov's theorem on KC proved in [19]. In Section 3.4, we give this alternative proof by making slight modifications to the de Jongh formulas in such a way that the new formulas are negation-free and satisfy a theorem similar to Jankov's theorem in [18].

## 3.1 -universal models of IPC

In this section we recall the definition of an $n$-universal model by giving a mathematical definition. Throughout this section, we will talk about the valuation of point $w$ in a $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$ by using the terminology color. In
general, an $n$-color is a $0-1$-sequence $c_{1} \cdots c_{n}$ of length $n$. If the length is understandable from the context, we will only talk about a color instead of an $n$-color. The set of all $n$-colors is denoted by $\mathbf{C}^{n}$. The projections $\pi_{i}: \mathbf{C}^{n} \rightarrow\{0,1\}(1 \leq i \leq n)$ are defined by $\pi_{i}\left(c_{1} \cdots c_{n}\right)=c_{i}$. We define an ordering on the colors as follows:

$$
c_{1} \cdots c_{n} \leq c_{1}^{\prime} \cdots c_{n}^{\prime} \text { iff } c_{i} \leq c_{i}^{\prime} \text { for each } 1 \leq i \leq n
$$

We write $c_{1} \cdots c_{n}<c_{1}^{\prime} \cdots c_{n}^{\prime}$ if $c_{1} \cdots c_{n} \leq c_{1}^{\prime} \cdots c_{n}^{\prime}$ but $c_{1} \cdots c_{n} \neq c_{1}^{\prime} \cdots c_{n}^{\prime}$.
A coloring on a nonempty set $W$ is a function col : $W \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{n}$. Colorings and valuations on frames are in one-one correspondence. Given a $\mathfrak{M}=$ $\langle W, R, V\rangle$, we can describe the valuation of a point by the coloring $\operatorname{col}_{V}$ : $W \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{n}$, defined by $\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=c_{1} \cdots c_{n}$, where for each $1 \leq i \leq n$,

$$
c_{i}= \begin{cases}1, & w \in V\left(p_{i}\right) ; \\ 0, & w \notin V\left(p_{i}\right) .\end{cases}
$$

We call $\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$ the color of $w$ under $V$. On the other hand, given a coloring col on a frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$, we can define a valuation $V_{c o l}: \operatorname{Prop} \rightarrow \wp(W)$ on $\mathfrak{F}$ by taking

$$
V_{c o l}\left(p_{i}\right)=\operatorname{col}^{-1}\left(\left\{c_{1} \cdots c_{n} \in \mathbf{C}^{n}: c_{i}=1\right\}\right) .
$$

In any frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$, we say that a subset $X \subseteq W$ totally covers a point $w \in W$, denoted by $w \prec X$, if $X$ is the set of all immediate successors of $w$. We will only write $w \prec v$ in the case that $w \prec\{v\}$. A subset $X \subseteq W$ is called an anti-chain if $|X|>1$ and for every $w, v \in X, w \neq v$ implies that $\neg w R v$ and $\neg v R w$. Let $R^{+}$denote the transitive and reflexive closure of a relation $R$.

Now, we define every layer of an $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)$ inductively. We first give a less mathematical definition as follows:

## Definition 3.1.1.

- In the first layer, $\mathcal{U}(n)^{0}=\left\langle U(n)^{0}, R^{0}, V^{0}\right\rangle$ consists of $2^{n}$ points with $2^{n}$ different $n$-colors, and the relation $R^{0}=\emptyset$.
- The model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{k+1}=\left\langle U(n)^{k+1}, R^{k+1}, V^{k+1}\right\rangle$ of the first $k+1$ layers of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ is obtained from $\mathcal{U}(n)^{k}$ by adding the following elements:
- for each point $w \in U(n)^{k} \backslash U(n)^{k-1}$ and each color $s<\operatorname{col}(w)$, we introduce a unique new point $v_{w, s}$ into $U(n)^{k+1}$. Extend the coloring $\operatorname{col}_{V^{k}}$ such that $\operatorname{col}_{V^{k+1}}\left(v_{w, s}\right)=s$. Extend $R^{k}$ to the smallest partial order satisfying $v_{w, s} \prec w$.
- for each finite anti-chain $X$ in $U(n)^{k}$ such that $X \nsubseteq U(n)^{k-1}$ and each color $s$ with $s \leq \operatorname{col}(w)$ for all $w \in X$, we introduce a unique new point $v_{X, s}$ into $U(n)^{k+1}$. Extend the coloring col $_{V^{k}}$ such that $\operatorname{col}_{V^{k+1}}\left(v_{X, s}\right)=s$. Extend $R^{k}$ to the smallest partial order satisfying $v_{X, s} \prec X$.
- Let $U(n)^{k+1}$, col ${ }^{k+1}$ and $R^{k+1}$ be extensions of $U(n)^{k}, c^{k}$ and $R^{k}$ according to the above regulations respectively.

Define the $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)=\langle U(n), R, V\rangle$ by taking

$$
U(n)=\bigcup_{i \in \omega} U(n)^{i}, \quad R=\left(\bigcup_{i \in \omega} R^{i}\right)^{+}, c o l=\bigcup_{i \in \omega} \operatorname{col}^{i} \text { and } V=V_{c o l} .
$$

Having the intuition of what an $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)$ looks like in mind, we now define every layer of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ precisely.

## Definition 3.1.2.

- The first layer $\mathcal{U}(n)^{0}=\left\langle U(n)^{0}, R^{0}, V^{0}\right\rangle$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ is defined by taking

$$
U(n)^{0}=\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{2^{n}}\right\}, R^{0}=\emptyset
$$

and letting $V^{0}=V_{\text {col }}{ }^{0}$, where the coloring $\operatorname{col}^{0}: U(n)^{0} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{n}$ is a bijection.

- The model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{k+1}=\left\langle U(n)^{k+1}, R^{k+1}, V^{k+1}\right\rangle$ of the first $k+1$ layers of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ is defined as follows:
- Let

$$
\begin{gathered}
E^{k+1}=\left\{v_{w, s}: w \in U(n)^{k} \backslash U(n)^{k-1}, s \in \mathbf{C}^{n} \text { and } s<\operatorname{col}(w)\right\}, \\
S^{k+1}=\left\{\left(v_{w, s}, w\right): v_{w, s} \in E^{k+1}\right\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Define a coloring col $_{0}^{k+1}: E^{k+1} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{n}$ by taking

$$
\operatorname{col}_{0}^{k+1}\left(v_{w, s}\right)=s .
$$

- Let
$F^{k+1}=\left\{v_{X, s}: X\right.$ is a finite anti-chain in $U(n)^{k}$ s.t. $X \nsubseteq U(n)^{k-1}$, $s \in \mathbf{C}^{n}$ and $s \leq \operatorname{col}(w)$ for all $\left.w \in X\right\}$,

$$
T^{k+1}=\left\{\left(v_{X, s}, w\right): v_{X, s} \in F^{k+1} \text { and } w \in X\right\} .
$$

Define a coloring col $_{1}^{k+1}: F^{k+1} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{n}$ by taking

$$
\operatorname{col}_{1}^{k+1}\left(v_{X, s}\right)=s
$$

- Finally, let

$$
\begin{gathered}
U(n)^{k+1}=U^{k} \cup E^{k+1} \cup F^{k+1} \\
R^{k+1}=\left(R^{k} \cup S^{k+1} \cup T^{k+1}\right)^{+} \\
\operatorname{col}^{k+1}=\operatorname{col}^{k} \cup \operatorname{col}_{0}^{k+1} \cup \operatorname{col}_{1}^{k+1} \\
V^{k+1}=V_{c o l}^{k+1}
\end{gathered}
$$

It is easy to see from the construction that every $\mathcal{U}(n)^{k}$ is finite. As a consequence, for any finite subset $X$ of $U(n)$, the generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{X}$ is finite. In particular, $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is finite for any point $w$ in $U(n)$.

The 1-universal model is also called Rieger-Nishimura ladder, which is depicted in Figure 3.1.

## $3.2 n$-universal models and $n$-Henkin models

Let $\operatorname{Upper}(\mathfrak{M})$ denote the submodel $\mathfrak{M}_{\{w \in W: d(w)<\omega\}}$ generated by all the points with finite depth. It is known that the $n$-universal model is isomorphic to the finite part of the $n$-Henkin model $\operatorname{Upper}(\mathcal{H}(n))$. N. Bezhanishvili gave in [3] an algebraic proof of this fact. In this section, we prove it directly. Two important lemmas are that every finite model can be mapped p-morphically to a generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, and that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is isomorphic to the generated submodel of the theory of the de Jongh formula of $w$ of $\mathcal{H}(n)$.

Lemma 3.2.1. Let $f$ be a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ onto $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$. If $w \in W$, then $f \upharpoonright R(w)$ is a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ onto $\mathfrak{N}_{f(w)}$.

Proof. Trivial.


Figure 3.1: Rieger-Nishimura ladder
Lemma 3.2.2. Given Kripke models $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$, and two points $w, v \in W$. Let $f$ be a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ to $\mathfrak{N}$, and $g$ be a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}_{v}$ to $\mathfrak{N}$. If for each $u \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \cap \operatorname{dom}(g), f(u)=g(u)$, then $f \cup g$ is a p-morphism of $\left.\mathfrak{M}_{\{ } w, v\right\}$ to $\mathfrak{N}$.

Proof. Trivial.
The next theorem shows that every finite model can be mapped p-morphically onto a generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)$. In the sequel, we will often refer to this useful theorem.

Theorem 3.2.3. For any finite rooted Kripke n-model $\mathfrak{M}$, there exists a unique $w \in U(n)$ and a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

Proof. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R\rangle$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)=\langle U(n), \preceq\rangle$. We prove the lemma by induction on the depth of $\mathfrak{M}$. If $d(\mathfrak{M})=1$, then $\mathfrak{M}$ is a single node $x$ with $\operatorname{col}(x)=i_{1} \ldots i_{n}$. By the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, there exists a unique $w \in U(n)^{0}$ such that $\operatorname{col}(w)=\operatorname{col}(x)$. Clearly, the map $f:\{w\} \rightarrow\{x\}$, defined as $f(w)=x$, is a unique p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

If $d(\mathfrak{M})=k+1$, for any $x \in W$ with $d(x)=k+1$, let $\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{m}\right\}$ be the set of all $x$ 's immediate successors. By the induction hypothesis, we have that for each $1 \leq i \leq m$, there exist a unique $w_{i}$ and a unique p-morphism $f_{i}$ of $\mathfrak{M}_{x_{i}}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{i}}$.

For any $1 \leq i, j \leq m$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
y \in \operatorname{dom}\left(f_{i}\right) \cap \operatorname{dom}\left(f_{j}\right) \Longrightarrow f_{i}(y)=f_{j}(y) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Indeed, since $d(y) \leq k$, by the induction hypothesis, there exist a unique $w_{y}$ and a unique p-morphism $f_{y}$ of $\mathfrak{M}_{y}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{y}}$. Now by Lemma 3.2.1, $f_{i} \upharpoonright R(y)$ and $f_{j} \upharpoonright R(y)$ are p-morphisms of $\mathfrak{M}_{y}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{f_{i}(y)}$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)_{f_{j}(y)}$ respectively. Then, by the uniqueness, we must have that $f_{i} \upharpoonright R(y)=f_{j} \upharpoonright$ $R(y)$, i.e. (3.1) holds.

Put

$$
f=f_{1} \cup \ldots \cup f_{m}
$$

By (3.1), $f$ is a well-defined function. Moreover, by Lemma 3.2.2, $f$ is a p-morphism of $\mathfrak{M}_{\left\{x_{1}, \cdots, x_{m}\right\}}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}}$. And clearly, $f$ is unique.

Let $X=\left\{w_{i_{1}}, \ldots, w_{i_{l}}\right\}$ be a subset of $\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{m}\right\}$ such that for any $w_{i} \in$ $\left\{w_{i_{1}}, \ldots, w_{i_{l}}\right\}$ and any $w_{j} \in\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{m}\right\}$,

$$
w_{i} \neq w_{j} \Rightarrow \neg w_{j} \preceq w_{i} .
$$

Observe that $X$ is either a singleton or an anti-chain. If $X$ is a singleton $\left\{w_{i_{1}}\right\}$, then since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{col}(x) \leq \operatorname{col}\left(x_{i}\right)=\operatorname{col}\left(w_{i}\right) \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $1 \leq i \leq m$, there are two cases. Case 1: $\operatorname{col}\left(w_{i_{1}}\right)=\operatorname{col}(x)$. Then define $g=f \cup\left\{\left(x, w_{i_{1}}\right)\right\}$. It follows from (3.2) that $g$ is a unique surjective p-morphism.

Case 2: $\operatorname{col}(x)<\operatorname{col}\left(w_{i_{1}}\right)$. Then by (3.2) and the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, there exists a unique point $w \in U(n)$ such that $\operatorname{col}(w)=\operatorname{col}(x)$ and $w \prec w_{i_{1}}$, which implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
w \prec w_{i} \text { for any } w_{i} \in\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{m}\right\} . \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $g=f \cup\{(x, w)\}$. It follows from (3.2) and (3.3) that $g$ is a unique surjective p-morphism.

If $X$ is an anti-chain, then by (3.2) and the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, there exists a unique point $w \in U(n)$ such that

$$
\operatorname{col}(w)=\operatorname{col}(x) \text { and } w \prec X,
$$

so (3.3) holds. Define $g=f \cup\{(x, w)\}$. It follows from (3.2) and (3.3) that $g$ is a unique surjective p-morphism.

The next theorem implies that $\mathcal{U}(n)$ is a countermodel of every nontheorem of IPC. This fact explains the meaning of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ being an "universal model".

Theorem 3.2.4. For any formula $\varphi(\vec{p}), \mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi$ iff $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$.
Proof. " $\Leftarrow$ " is trivial. Suppose $\not_{\text {IPC }} \varphi(\vec{p})$. Then there exists a finite model $\mathfrak{M}$ and a point $w \in \mathfrak{M}$ such that $\mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash \varphi(\vec{p})$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a p-morphism $f$ of $\mathfrak{M}$ to $\mathcal{U}(n)$. Hence, $\mathcal{U}(n), f(w) \not \vDash \varphi(\vec{p})$.

For any point $w$ in an $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$, if $\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{m}\right\}$ is the set of all immediate successors of $w$, then we let

$$
\begin{gathered}
\operatorname{prop}(w):=\left\{p_{i}: w \models p_{i}, 1 \leq i \leq n\right\}, \\
\operatorname{notprop}(w)
\end{gathered}=\left\{q_{i}: w \not \models q_{i}, 1 \leq i \leq n\right\}, ~ l
$$

$\operatorname{newprop}(w):=\left\{r_{j}: w \not \models r_{j} \text { and } w_{i} \models r_{j} \text { for each } 1 \leq i \leq m \text {, for } 1 \leq j \leq n\right\}^{1}$.
Next, we define the de Jongh formulas, which were first introduced in [8].
Definition 3.2.5. Let $w$ be a point in $\mathcal{U}(n)$. we inductively define de Jongh formulas $\varphi_{w}$ and $\psi_{w}$.

If $d(w)=1$, then let

$$
\varphi_{w}:=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{\neg p_{k}: w \not \models p_{k}, 1 \leq k \leq n\right\}
$$

and

$$
\psi_{w}:=\neg \varphi_{w} .
$$

If $d(w)>1$, and $\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{m}\right\}$ is the set of all immediate successors of $w$, then define

$$
\varphi_{w}:=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge\left(\bigvee \text { newprop }(w) \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{w_{i}} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{w_{i}}\right)
$$

and

$$
\psi_{w}:=\varphi_{w} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{w_{i}}
$$

[^0]The most important properties of the de Jongh formulas are revealed in the next theorem. It was first proved in [8].

Theorem 3.2.6. For every $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)=\langle U(n), R, V\rangle$, we have that

- $V\left(\varphi_{w}\right)=R(w)$;
- $V\left(\psi_{w}\right)=U(n) \backslash R^{-1}(w)$.

Now, we recall the notion of an isomorphism between two Kripke models.
Definition 3.2.7. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be two Kripke models. A bijection $f: W \rightarrow V$ is called an isomorphism from $\mathfrak{M}$ onto $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ if the following conditions are satisfied.

- For any $p \in$ Prop and any $x \in W, x \in V(p)$ iff $f(x) \in V^{\prime}(p)$.
- For any $x, y \in W, x R y$ iff $f(x) R^{\prime} f(y)$.

We say that $\mathfrak{M}$ is isomorphic to $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$, in symbols $\mathfrak{M} \cong \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$, if there is an isomorphism from $\mathfrak{M}$ to $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$.

Remark 3.2.8. An injective and surjective p-morphism is an isomorphism.
Lemma 3.2.9. Let $f$ be a isomorphism of $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ onto $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$. If $w \in W$, then $f \upharpoonright R(w)$ is an isomorphism of $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ onto $\mathfrak{N}_{f(w)}$.

Proof. Trivial.
The next lemma is important in the proof of the main theorem of this section.

Lemma 3.2.10. For any $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)$, let $\varphi_{w}$ be a de Jongh formula. Then we have that $\mathcal{H}(n)_{T h\left(\varphi_{w}\right)} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

Proof. Let $\mathcal{U}(n)=\langle U(n), R, V\rangle$ and $\mathcal{H}(n)=\left\langle H(n), R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$. Define a map $f: U(n)_{w} \rightarrow \mathcal{H}(n)_{T h\left(\varphi_{w}\right)}$ by taking

$$
f(v)=\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{v}\right) .
$$

We show that $f$ is an isomorphism.

First for any $v \in U(n)$, any formula $\theta$, we have that

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta \in T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right) & \Longleftrightarrow \vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi_{v} \rightarrow \theta \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi_{v} \rightarrow \theta(\text { by Theorem 3.2.4) } \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \forall u \in V\left(\varphi_{v}\right), \mathcal{U}(n), u \models \theta \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \forall u \in R(v), \mathcal{U}(n), u \models \theta \text { (by Theorem 3.2.6) } \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n), v \models \theta . \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

It follows that $v \in V(p) \Longleftrightarrow T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right) \in V^{\prime}(p)$ and that

$$
\begin{aligned}
u R v & \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n), v \models \varphi_{u}(\text { by Theorem 3.2.6) } \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \varphi_{u} \in T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right)(\text { by }(3.4)) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subseteq T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow f(u) R^{\prime} f(v) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, suppose $u \neq v$. W.l.o.g. we may assume that $\neg u R v$, which by Theorem 3.2.6 means that $\mathcal{U}(n), u \notin \varphi_{v}$. Thus, $\varphi_{v} \notin T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$ by (3.4), and so $f(u)=T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \neq \operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)=f(v)$. Hence, $f$ is injective.

It remains to show that $f$ is surjective. That is to show that for any $\Gamma \in \mathcal{H}(n)_{T h\left(\varphi_{w}\right)}$ (i.e. any theory $\Gamma \supseteq \operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{w}\right)$ with disjunction property) there exists $v \in \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ such that $\Gamma=T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$. We show this by showing a stronger result by induction on $d(u)$ that for any theory $\Gamma$ with disjunction property,
if $\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subseteq \Gamma$, then $\Gamma=\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$ for some $v \in U(n)$ with $u R v$.
$d(u)=1$. It suffices to show that if $\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subseteq \Gamma$, then $\Gamma=\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$. Suppose $\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subsetneq \Gamma$. Then there exists $\theta \in \Gamma$ such that $\theta \notin T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$. So we have that $\varphi_{u} \nvdash \theta$. Then by Theorem 3.2.4, $\mathcal{U}(n) \not \vDash \varphi_{u} \rightarrow \theta$, which by Theorem 3.2.6 means that $u \not \vDash \theta$. Since $d(u)=1$, we have that

$$
u \models \neg \theta \text { and so } \mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi_{u} \rightarrow \neg \theta,
$$

by Theorem 3.2.6. Thus, by Theorem 3.2.4, $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi_{u} \rightarrow \neg \theta$. Therefore $\neg \theta \in$ $T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$, and since $T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subset \Gamma$, we have that $\neg \theta \in \Gamma$, which is impossible since $\theta \in \Gamma$ and $\Gamma$ is consistent.
$d(u)=k+1$. Let $\left\{u_{1}, \ldots, u_{m}\right\}$ be the set of all immediate successors of $u$. Suppose $T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subseteq \Gamma$. If $T h\left(\varphi_{u_{i}}\right) \subseteq \Gamma$ for some $1 \leq i \leq m$, then by induction
hypothesis, $\Gamma=T h\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$ for some $v \in R\left(u_{i}\right)$, i.e. $v \in R(u)$. Now suppose $T h\left(\varphi_{u_{i}}\right) \nsubseteq \Gamma$ for all $1 \leq i \leq m$. Thus $\Gamma \nvdash \varphi_{u_{i}}$ for each $1 \leq i \leq m$. Then for every $\theta \in \Gamma$, we have that

$$
\theta \nvdash \varphi_{u_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{u_{m}} .
$$

Since $\operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right) \subseteq \Gamma, \varphi_{u} \in \Gamma$ and $\theta \wedge \varphi_{u} \in \Gamma$, which implies that

$$
\theta \wedge \varphi_{u} \nvdash \varphi_{u_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{u_{m}} .
$$

Then there exists a finite rooted model $\mathfrak{M}$ such that $\mathfrak{M} \vDash \theta \wedge \varphi_{u}$ and $\mathfrak{M} \not \vDash$ $\varphi_{u_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{u_{m}}$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a unique $u^{\prime} \in U(n)$ such that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{u^{\prime}}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{M}$. Thus we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \models \varphi_{u} \text { and } \mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \not \models \varphi_{u_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{u_{m}} \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition, the former of the above means that

$$
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(u) \wedge\left(\bigvee \text { newprop }(u) \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{u_{i}} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{u_{i}}\right)
$$

It then follows that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(u),  \tag{3.6}\\
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \models \bigvee \text { newprop }(u) \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{u_{i}} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{u_{i}} . \tag{3.7}
\end{gather*}
$$

In view of the second formula of (3.5), we must have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \not \models \bigvee \operatorname{newprop}(u) \text { and } \mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \not \models \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{u_{i}} \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Theorem 3.2.6 the second formula of (3.8) implies that $u^{\prime} \notin U(n) \backslash R^{-1}\left(u_{i}\right)$ for all $1 \leq i \leq m$. Thus, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{\prime} \in \bigcap_{i=1}^{m} R^{-1}\left(u_{i}\right) \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{notprop}\left(u^{\prime}\right) \supseteq \bigcup_{i=1}^{m} \text { notprop }\left(u_{i}\right) . \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then since

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(u)=\operatorname{newprop}(u) \cup \bigcup_{i=1}^{m} \text { notprop }\left(u_{i}\right),
$$

by the first formula of (3.8) we have that

$$
\operatorname{notprop}\left(u^{\prime}\right) \supseteq \operatorname{notprop}(u) .
$$

Together with (3.6) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{col}\left(u^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}(u) . \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{\prime} \prec\left\{u_{1}, \cdots, u_{m}\right\}, \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e. $u_{1}, \ldots, u_{m}$ are the only immediate successors of $u^{\prime}$. Suppose otherwise. Then there exists $v \neq u_{i}$ for all $1 \leq i \leq m$ such that $v$ is an immediate successor of $u^{\prime}$. Observe that $\left\{u_{1}, \cdots, u_{m}, v\right\}$ is an anti-chain. Thus we have that

$$
u^{\prime} \notin R^{-1}\left(u_{i}\right) \text { and } u^{\prime} \notin R\left(u_{i}\right),
$$

for each $1 \leq i \leq m$. Then by Theorem 3.2.6,

$$
\mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \models \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{u_{i}} \text { and } \mathcal{U}(n), u^{\prime} \not \models \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{u_{i}}
$$

These contradict (3.7).
Note that by the definition, there exists an unique point in $\mathcal{U}(n)$ which satisfies (3.9), (3.11) and (3.7). So $u^{\prime}=u$, which implies that $\mathcal{U}(n), u \models \theta$. Thus by Theorem 3.2.6, $\mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi_{u} \rightarrow \theta$, which by Theorem 3.2.4 implies that $\varphi_{u} \vdash \theta$, i.e. $\theta \in \operatorname{Th}\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$. Therefore $\Gamma=T h\left(\varphi_{u}\right)$.

Now, we are in a position to prove the main theorem of this section.
Theorem 3.2.11. $\operatorname{Upper}(\mathcal{H}(n))$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{U}(n)$.
Proof. Let $\mathcal{H}(n)=\left\langle H(n), R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)=\left\langle U(n), R, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$. For any $x \in$ $\operatorname{Upper}(\mathcal{H}(n))$, by Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a unique $w_{x}$ such that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{x}}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathcal{H}(n)_{x}$ via some surjective function $h$. Note that for any $y, z \in H(n)_{x}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y \neq z \Longrightarrow \operatorname{col}(y) \neq \operatorname{col}(z) \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

thus $h$ is injective, and so by Remark 3.2.8

$$
\mathcal{H}(n)_{x} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{x}} .
$$

Define $f: \operatorname{Upper}(\mathcal{H}(n)) \rightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)$ by taking $f(x)=w_{x}$. We show that $f$ is an isomorphism. Clearly, $\operatorname{col}(x)=\operatorname{col}\left(w_{x}\right)$. Suppose $x R^{\prime} y$ and $g$ is the unique isomorphism from $\mathcal{H}(n)_{x}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{f(x)}$. By Lemma 3.2.9 $\mathcal{H}(n)_{y} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{g(y)}$, thus by uniqueness, we must have that $g(y)=f(y)$. Thus, $f(x) R f(y)$ since $f(x) R g(y)$.

Suppose $f(x) R f(y)$ for some $x, y \in U(n)$. Let $g$ be the unique isomorphism from $\mathcal{H}(n)_{x}$ onto $\mathcal{U}(n)_{f(x)}$. Then there exists $z \in R^{\prime}(x)$ such that $g(z)=f(y)$. Observe that

$$
\operatorname{col}(z)=\operatorname{col}(f(y))=\operatorname{col}(y)
$$

Since in $\mathcal{H}(n)$, distinct points have distinct colors, we conclude that $z=y$ and so $x R^{\prime} y$.

From (3.13) it follows that for any $y, z \in H(n), y \neq z$ implies $\mathcal{H}(n)_{y} \nexists$ $\mathcal{H}(n)_{z}$. Thus,

$$
\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{y}} \cong \mathcal{H}(n)_{y} \not \not \mathcal{H}(n)_{z} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{z}},
$$

and so $w_{y} \neq w_{z}$, which means that $f$ is injective.
It remains to show that $f$ is surjective. For any $w \in U(n)$, consider the de Jongh formula $\varphi_{w}$. By Lemma 3.2.10, $\mathcal{H}(n)_{T h\left(\varphi_{w}\right)} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$, so $f\left(T h\left(\varphi_{w}\right)\right)=$ $w$.

We end this section by a corollary which follows from the correspondence between $\mathcal{H}(n)$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)$. For any $n$-models $\mathfrak{M}$ and any point $x$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, let $T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x)=\{\varphi: \mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi\}$.

Corollary 3.2.12. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ be any model and $w$ be a point in $\mathcal{U}(n)=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. For any point $x$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, if $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}$, then there exists a unique $v \in R(w)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{1}}, \cdots, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \vDash \varphi_{v_{m}}, \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $v \prec\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{m}\right\}$.
Proof. Note that $T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x)$ is a point in $\mathcal{H}(n)=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle . \mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}$ implies that $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x) \rightarrow \varphi_{w}$ and $T h_{n}\left(\varphi_{w}\right) R^{\prime} T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x)$. Thus, by Lemma 3.2.10, $T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x)=T h_{n}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$ for a unique $v \in R(w)$. So $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}$.

By Theorem 3.2.6, we have that $\mathcal{U}(n) \not \vDash \varphi_{v} \rightarrow \varphi_{v_{i}}$ for all $1 \leq i \leq m$. Thus $\nvdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi_{v} \rightarrow \varphi_{v_{i}}$ and $\varphi_{v_{i}} \notin T h_{n}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)=T h_{n}(\mathfrak{M}, x)$, so $\mathfrak{M}, x \not \vDash \varphi_{v_{i}}$.


Figure 3.2: The $n$-Henkin model

### 3.3 Some properties of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ and $\mathcal{H}(n)$

In view of Theorem 3.2.11, the $n$-universal model and $n$-Henkin model can be drawn in the way of Figure 3.2. In this section, we show that these two models are "connected" in the sense that every infinite upset of $\mathcal{H}(n)$ has an infinite intersection in $\mathcal{U}(n)$ (see also Figure 3.2).

Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ be a finite rooted frame. We introduce a new propositional variable $p_{w}$ for every point $w$ in $W$, and define a valuation $V$ by letting $V\left(p_{w}\right)=R(w)$. Put $n=|W|$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a p-morphism $f$ from the model $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ onto a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$. By the construction, we know that different points of $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ have different colors, thus $f$ is injective, which by Remark 3.2.8 means that $f$ is an isomorphism, i.e. $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

The Kripke frame of the $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ can be viewed as a general frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ where $\mathcal{P}=U p(W)$, which is clearly refined. For every point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)$, the generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a finite model, thus the underlying generated subframe $\mathfrak{F}_{w}$ is also finite, which is then clearly compact. So the general frame $\mathfrak{F}_{w}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a descriptive frame.

An earlier version of the following theorem was proved by Jankov in [18]. De Jongh proved in [8] the same theorem algebraically by using de Jongh formulas. Here we prove the next theorem from the frame-theoretic point of view inspired by the algebraic proof in [8]. In the next section, we will prove Jankov's Theorem on KC (Theorem 3.4.9), where a similar idea of the
following proof will be used in Lemma 3.4.8. The proof of the next theorem is set up in the way to be easily generalized to the proof of Lemma 3.4.8.

Theorem 3.3.1 (Jankov-de Jongh). For every finite rooted frame $\mathfrak{F}$, let $\psi_{w}$ be the de Jongh formula of the point $w$ in the model $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ described above. Then for every descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$,
$\mathfrak{G} \notin \psi_{w}$ iff $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$.
Proof. Let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}, V\rangle$. Suppose $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$. By Theorem 3.2.6, $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$, thus $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$. So by applying Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$ is obtained.

Suppose $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$. Then there exists a model $\mathfrak{N}$ on $\mathfrak{G}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N} \not \vDash \varphi_{w} \rightarrow \varphi_{w_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{w_{m}} \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $w \prec\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$. Consider the generated submodel $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}=\mathfrak{N}_{V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{w}\right)}=$ $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ of $\mathfrak{N}$. Note that since $V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{w}\right)$ is admissible, by Corollary 2.6.13, $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is a descriptive frame. Define a map $f: W^{\prime} \rightarrow W$ by taking $f(x)=v$ iff

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{v}, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{1}}, \cdots, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \vDash \varphi_{v_{k}} \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $v \prec\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{k}\right\}$.
Note that for every $x \in W^{\prime}, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{w}$, thus by Corollary 3.2.12, there exists a unique $v \in R(w)$ satisfying (3.16). So $f$ is well-defined.

We show that $f$ is a surjective frame p-morphism of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ onto $\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Suppose $x, y \in W^{\prime}$ with $x R^{\prime} y, f(x)=v$ and $f(y)=u$. Since $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{v}$, we have that $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models \varphi_{v}$. By Corollary 3.2.12, there exists a unique $u^{\prime} \in R(v)$ such that $u^{\prime}$ and $y$ satisfy (3.16). So, since $u$ and $y$ also satisfy (3.16), by the uniqueness, $u^{\prime}=u$ and $v R u$.

Next, suppose $x \in W^{\prime}$ and $v, u \in U(n)_{w}$ such that $f(x)=v$ and $v R u$. Since $x$ and $v$ satisfy (3.16), by the definition of $\varphi_{v}$, we must have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models \psi_{v_{i}}, \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $1 \leq i \leq k$. We now show by induction on $d(u)$ that there exists $y \in W^{\prime}$ such that $f(y)=u$ and $x R^{\prime} y$.
$d(u)=d(v)-1$. Then $u$ is an immediate successor of $v$ and $x$ and $u$ satisfies (3.17). So, by the definition of $\psi_{u}$, we have that there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x)$ such that $y$ and $u$ satisfy (3.16), thus $f(y)=u$.
$d(u)<d(v)-1$. Then there exists an immediate successor $v_{i_{0}}$ of $v$ such that $v_{i_{0}} R u$. By the result of the basic step of the induction, there exists $y \in W^{\prime}$ such that $x R^{\prime} y$ and $f(y)=v_{i_{0}}$. Since $d\left(v_{i_{0}}\right)<d(v)$, by the induction hypothesis, there exists $z \in W^{\prime}$ such that $y R^{\prime} z$ and $f(z)=u$. And clearly, $x R^{\prime} z$.

For any upset $X \in \mathcal{P}$, we have that $X=\bigcup_{v \in X} R(v)$. First, we show that for every $v \in X$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
f^{-1}(R(v))=V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}\right) \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

For every $x \in f^{-1}(R(v)), f(x) \in R(v)$, which means that there exists $u \in$ $R(v)$ such that $f(x)=u$ and so $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{u}$. Note that by Theorem 3.2.6 and Theorem 3.2.4, we have that

$$
\vdash_{\mathrm{IPC}} \varphi_{u} \rightarrow \varphi_{v}
$$

Thus $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{v}$ and so $x \in V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$. On the other hand, for every $x \in V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)$, by Corollary 3.2.12, there exists a unique $u \in R(v)$ such that $f(x)=u$, thus $x \in f^{-1}(R(v))$.

Now, by (3.18), we have that

$$
f^{-1}(X)=f^{-1}\left(\bigcup_{v \in X} R(v)\right)=\bigcup_{v \in X} f^{-1}(R(v))=\bigcup_{v \in X} V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}\right)
$$

Since $X$ is finite, we obtain $f^{-1}(X) \in \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$.
Lastly, we show that $f$ is surjective. First, it follows from (3.15) that there exists $x \in W^{\prime}$ such that (3.16) holds for $x$ and $w$, i.e. $f(x)=w$. Then, for every point $v \in U(n)_{w}$, we have that $w R v$. Since $f$ is a p-morphism, there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x) \subseteq W^{\prime}$ such that $f(y)=v$.

Hence $f$ is a surjective frame p-morphism of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ onto $\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Then since $\mathfrak{F} \cong\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle, \mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$, which is a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$.

Next, we will show that if an upset $U$ generated by a point in the $n$ Henkin model has a finite intersection with its upper part, the $n$-universal model, then $U$ totally lies in $\mathcal{U}(n)$. First, we need a definition.

We call $w \in U$ a border point of an upset $U$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, if $w \notin U$ and all the successors $v$ of $w$ with $v \neq w$ are in $U$. Denote the set of all border points of $U$ by $B(U)$. Note that all endpoints which are not in $U$ are in $B(U)$. For more details on border points, one may refer to [4].

Fact 3.3.2. If $U$ is finite, then $B(U)$ is also finite.
Proof. Since $U$ is finite, there exists $k \in \omega$ such that $U \subseteq U(n)^{k}$. Observe that $B(U) \subseteq U(n)^{k+1}$, which means that $B(U)$ is finite, since $U(n)^{k+1}$ is finite.

The next lemma shows the connection of upsets and their border points.
Lemma 3.3.3. If $X=\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{k}\right\}$ is a finite anti-chain in $\mathcal{U}(n)$ and $B\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{X}\right)=\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$, then $\vdash_{\text {IPC }}\left(\varphi_{v_{1}} \vee \cdots \vee \varphi_{v_{k}}\right) \leftrightarrow\left(\psi_{w_{1}} \wedge \cdots \wedge \psi_{w_{m}}\right)$.

Proof. In view of Theorem 3.2.4, it is sufficient to show that $\mathcal{U}(n) \models\left(\varphi_{v_{1}} \vee\right.$ $\left.\cdots \vee \varphi_{v_{k}}\right) \leftrightarrow\left(\psi_{w_{1}} \wedge \cdots \wedge \psi_{w_{m}}\right)$. By Theorem 3.2.6, it is then sufficient to show that

$$
x \in R\left(v_{1}\right) \cup \cdots \cup R\left(v_{k}\right) \text { iff } x \notin R^{-1}\left(w_{1}\right) \cup \cdots \cup R^{-1}\left(w_{m}\right) .
$$

For " $\Rightarrow$ ": Suppose $x \in R\left(v_{1}\right) \cup \cdots \cup R\left(v_{k}\right)=U(n)_{X}$. If $x \in R^{-1}\left(w_{i}\right)$ for some $1 \leq i \leq m$, then since $U(n)_{X}$ is upward closed, we have that $w_{i} \in U(n)_{X}$, which contradicts the definition of $B\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{X}\right)$.

For " $\Leftarrow$ ": Suppose $x \notin R\left(v_{1}\right) \cup \cdots \cup R\left(v_{k}\right)=U(n)_{X}$. We show by induction on $d(x)$ that $x \in R^{-1}\left(w_{i}\right)$ for some $1 \leq i \leq m$.
$d(x)=1$. Then $x$ is an endpoint, which is a border point. Thus, $x=w_{i}$ for some $1 \leq i \leq m$ and so $x \in R^{-1}\left(w_{i}\right)$.
$d(x)>1$. The result holds trivially if $x$ is a border point. Now suppose there exists $y \in R(x)$ such that $y \notin U(n)_{X}$. Since $d(y)<d(x)$, by the induction hypothesis, there exists $1 \leq i \leq m$ such that $y \in R^{-1}\left(w_{i}\right)$. Thus, $x \in R^{-1}\left(w_{i}\right)$.
Theorem 3.3.4. Let $\Gamma$ be a point in $\mathcal{H}(n)$, i.e. $\Gamma$ is a theory with the disjunction property. If $R(\Gamma) \cap \mathcal{U}(n)$ is finite, then $R(\Gamma)=R(\Gamma) \cap \mathcal{U}(n)$.

Proof. Suppose $X=R(\Gamma) \cap \mathcal{U}(n)$ is finite. Then the set $B(X)$ of border points of $X$ is finite. Let $B(X)=\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$. Suppose $\Gamma \nvdash \psi_{w_{i}}$ for some $1 \leq i \leq m$. Then there exists a descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$ such that $\mathfrak{G} \models \Gamma$ and $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \psi_{w_{i}}$. Since the underlying frame $\mathfrak{F}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{i}}$ is finite rooted, by Theorem 3.3.1, the latter implies that $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated submodel of $\mathfrak{G}$. Thus, by Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathfrak{F} \models \Gamma$ and so $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{i}} \models \Gamma$, which is impossible since $w_{i} \in B(X)$ and $w_{i} \notin R(\Gamma) \cap \mathcal{U}(n)$.

Hence, we conclude that $\Gamma \vdash \psi_{w_{i}}$ for all $1 \leq i \leq m$. Let $Y$ be the antichain consisting of all least points of $X$. Then by Lemma 3.3.3, $\Gamma \vdash \varphi_{w}$ for
some $w \in Y$, which by Theorem 3.2.6 means that $\Gamma \in R(w)$, so $\Gamma \in \mathcal{U}(n)$, therefore $R(\Gamma)=R(\Gamma) \cap \mathcal{U}(n)$.

The method of the above theorem gives more results.

### 3.4 An alternative proof of Jankov's Theorem on KC

KC is the intermediate logic axiomatized by $\neg \varphi \vee \neg \neg \varphi$. KC is complete with respect to finite rooted frames with unique top points. It is known that KC proves exactly the same negation-free formulas as IPC. That is for any negation-free formula $\varphi$, $\mathbf{K C} \vdash \varphi$ iff $\mathbf{I P C} \vdash \varphi$. Jankov proved in [19] that $\mathbf{K C}$ is the strongest intermediate logic that has this property. In this section, we give a frame theoretic alternative proof of Jankov's Theorem. The basic idea of the proof comes from Theorem 3.3.1 in the previous section and the next theorem. For more details on the next theorem, one may refer to [8], [9].

Theorem 3.4.1. If $L$ is an intermediate logic strictly extending IPC, i.e. $\mathbf{I P C} \subset L \subseteq \mathbf{C P C}$, then for some $n \in \omega, L \vdash \psi_{w}$ for some $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)$.
Proof. Suppose $\chi$ is a formula satisfying

$$
L \vdash \chi \text { and } \operatorname{IPC} \nvdash \chi .
$$

Then there exists a finite rooted frame $\mathfrak{F}$ such that $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \chi$. Introduce a new propositional variable $p_{w}$ for every point $w$ in $W$, and define a valuation $V$ by letting $V\left(p_{w}\right)=R(w)$. Put $n=|\mathfrak{F}|$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ such that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{F}$. By the construction, we know that different points of $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ have different colors, thus $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

Consider the de Jongh formula $\psi_{w}$. Suppose $L \nvdash \psi_{w}$. Then there exists a descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$ of $L$ such that $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$. By Theorem 3.3.1, $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$. Thus, by Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathfrak{F}$ is an $L$ model. Since $L \vdash \chi$, we have that $\mathfrak{F} \models \chi$, which leads to a contradiction.

Now, we define formulas $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$, which are negation-free modifications of de Jongh formulas. They do a similar job for KC-frames as de Jongh formulas do for all frames. First, we introduce some terminologies.

For any finite set $X$ of formulas with $|X|>1$, let

$$
\Delta X=\bigwedge\{\varphi \leftrightarrow \psi: \varphi, \psi \in X\}
$$

For the case that $|X|=1$ or 0 , we stipulate $\Delta X=\top$.
Let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a generated submodel with a largest element $t$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ such that

- $t \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n} ;$
- $\operatorname{col}_{V}(w) \neq \operatorname{col}_{V}(v)$ for all $w, v \in W$ such that $w \neq v$.

Let $r$ be a new propositional variable.
Definition 3.4.2. We inductively define the formulas $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ for every $w \in W$.

If $d(w)=1$,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi_{w}^{\prime}=p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}, \\
\psi_{w}^{\prime}=\varphi_{w}^{\prime} \rightarrow r .
\end{gathered}
$$

If $d(w)=2$, let $q$ be the propositional letter in $\operatorname{notprop}(w)$ with the least index. Define

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi_{w}^{\prime}=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(w) \wedge((q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow q)^{2} \\
\psi_{w}^{\prime}=\varphi_{w}^{\prime} \rightarrow q
\end{gathered}
$$

If $d(w)>2$ and $w \prec\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$, then let

$$
\varphi_{w}^{\prime}:=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge\left(\bigvee \text { newprop }(w) \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \psi_{w_{i}}^{\prime} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}\right)
$$

and

$$
\psi_{w}^{\prime}:=\varphi_{w}^{\prime} \rightarrow \bigvee_{i=1}^{m} \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}
$$

We will prove for the $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ formulas a lemma (Lemma 3.4.8) which is an analogy of Theorem 3.3.1 for the $\varphi_{w}$ and $\psi_{w}$ formulas.

[^1]Lemma 3.4.3. Let $V$ be a valuation on a frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and $V^{\prime}$ is a valuation on $\mathfrak{F}$ defined by

$$
V^{\prime}(p)= \begin{cases}V(p), & p \neq r \\ \emptyset, & p=r\end{cases}
$$

Then for any formula $\varphi$,

$$
\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle \models \varphi \text { iff }\left\langle\mathfrak{F}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle \models \varphi[\perp / r]^{3} .
$$

Proof. We prove the lemma by induction on $\varphi$ that for any $w \in W$,

$$
\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \models \varphi \text { iff }\left\langle\mathfrak{F}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle, w \models \varphi[\perp / r] .
$$

$\varphi=\perp$. Then $w=t,\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \vDash \perp$ and $\left\langle\mathfrak{F}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle, w \not \vDash r$.
The induction steps that $\varphi=\psi \wedge \chi, \psi \vee \chi$ and $\varphi=\psi \rightarrow \chi$ are proved easily.
Lemma 3.4.4. Let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ be a model described above with a largest element $t$. Then for any $w \in W$, we have that
(i) $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow \varphi_{w}^{\prime}$;
(ii) $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \psi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow \psi_{w}^{\prime}$.

Proof. We prove the lemma by induction on $d(w)$.
$d(w)=1$. Then $w=t, \varphi_{w}[\perp / r]=\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}[\perp / r]=\psi_{w}^{\prime}$, so the lemma holds trivially.
$d(w)=2$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\vdash \varphi_{w} \leftrightarrow & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge\left(\bigvee \text { notprop }(w) \vee \neg\left(p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}\right) \rightarrow p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}\right) \\
\vdash \varphi_{w} \leftrightarrow & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge(\bigvee \operatorname{notprop}(w) \vee \neg \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w) \rightarrow \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)) \\
\vdash \varphi_{w} \leftrightarrow & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge(\bigvee \operatorname{notprop}(w) \rightarrow \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)) \\
& \wedge(\neg \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w) \rightarrow \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)) \\
\vdash \varphi_{w} \leftrightarrow & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \bigwedge_{s \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)}(s \rightarrow \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)) \\
& \wedge(\neg \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w) \rightarrow \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)) \\
\vdash \varphi_{w} \leftrightarrow & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(w) \wedge(\neg q \rightarrow q) .
\end{aligned}
$$

[^2]Thus, $\vdash \varphi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow \varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \vdash \psi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow\left(\varphi_{w}[\perp / r] \rightarrow \varphi_{t}[\perp / r]\right) \\
& \vdash \psi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow\left(\varphi_{w}^{\prime} \rightarrow \varphi_{t}^{\prime}\right) \\
& \vdash \psi_{w}[\perp / r] \leftrightarrow \psi_{w}^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The induction step that $d(w)>2$ is proved easily by applying the induction hypothesis.

For any $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ described above, by Theorem 3.2.6, $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$ for each $w \in R\left(w_{0}\right)$. Thus, by the Lemma 3.4.3 and Lemma 3.4.4, the underlying frame of $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ falsifies $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Hence $\Downarrow_{\text {IPC }} \psi_{w}^{\prime}$ for each $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$, where $w \in R\left(w_{0}\right)$. We will use this fact later in the proof of Theorem 3.4.9.

For any $w, v$ with $w R v$ in the $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)$, by Theorem 3.2.6 and Theorem 3.2.4, it is easy to prove that $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi_{v} \rightarrow \varphi_{w}$. The next lemma shows that the $\varphi_{w}$ and $\varphi_{v}$ formulas have the same property. Note that Theorem 3.2.4 is not applicable for the $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ formulas. So here we prove the next theorem directly from the construction of the $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ formulas.

Lemma 3.4.5. Let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a model described above and let $w, v$ be two points in $W$ with $w R v$. Then we have that $\vdash_{\operatorname{IPC}} \varphi_{v}^{\prime} \rightarrow \varphi_{w}^{\prime}$.

Proof. For any finite rooted model $\mathfrak{M}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ with the root $r$ and some point $x \in R^{\prime}(r)$, suppose $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}$. We show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}^{\prime} . \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $d(v)=1$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n} . \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

We show (3.19) by induction on $d(w)$.
$d(w)=d(v)+1=2$. Then clearly (3.20) implies that $\mathfrak{M}, x \models q$, which implies that

$$
\mathfrak{M}, x \models(q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow q .
$$

Thus, together with (3.21), (3.19) is obtained.
$d(w)>d(v)+1$. For any $w_{i} \in S_{w}$, since $d\left(w_{i}\right)<d(w)$, by the induction hypothesis, $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}$, thus $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \bigvee_{w_{i} \in S_{w}} \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \bigvee \text { newprop }(w) \vee \bigvee_{w_{i} \in S_{w}} \psi_{w_{i}}^{\prime} \rightarrow \bigvee_{w_{i} \in S_{w}} \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime} . \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, together with (3.21), (3.19) is obtained.
If $d(v)=2$, then clearly (3.21) holds. We show (3.19) by induction on $d(w) . d(w)=d(v)+1$. Then $v$ is an immediate successor of $w$, and (3.22) follows from $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}$. Thus, together with (3.21), (3.19) is obtained.
$d(w)>d(v)+1$. For any $w_{i} \in S_{w}$, since $d\left(w_{i}\right)<d(w)$, by the induction hypothesis, we have that $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}$ and so (3.22) holds. Thus, together with (3.21), (3.19) is obtained.

If $d(v)>2$, then clearly $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}$ implies (3.21). By a similar argument as above, we can show that (3.22) holds, thus, (3.19) is obtained.

A similar result to the next lemma for the de Jongh formula $\varphi_{w}$ can also be obtained by a similar argument.

Lemma 3.4.6. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be any model and $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a model described above. Put $V^{\prime \prime}=V^{\prime} \upharpoonright\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}$. For any point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ and any point $x$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{w_{1}}^{\prime}, \cdots, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{w_{m}}^{\prime}, \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $w \prec\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$, then $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$.
Proof. We prove the lemma by induction on $d(w)$.
$d(w)=1$. Then (3.23) means that $\mathfrak{M}, x \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}$. Note that $w=t$ also satisfies $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}, t \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}$. So $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$.
$d(w)=2$. Then (3.23) implies that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathfrak{M}, x=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w),  \tag{3.24}\\
& \mathfrak{M}, x \models \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(w),  \tag{3.25}\\
& \mathfrak{M}, x \not \vDash p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n} . \tag{3.26}
\end{align*}
$$

First, from (3.24), it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{prop}(x) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \supseteq \operatorname{prop}(w) \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, it follows from (3.26) that there exists $p_{i}(1 \leq i \leq n)$ such that $p_{i} \notin \operatorname{prop}(x)$, which by (3.27) implies that $p_{i} \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)$. Thus, by (3.25), $\mathfrak{M}, x \notin \bigvee \operatorname{notprop}(w)$ and so

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(x) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \supseteq \operatorname{notprop}(w) .
$$

Together with (3.27), we obtain $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$. $d(w)>2$. Then (3.23) implies (3.24) and

$$
\begin{gather*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \bigvee \text { newprop }^{(w)},  \tag{3.28}\\
\mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \psi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}, \tag{3.29}
\end{gather*}
$$

for all $w_{i} \in S_{w}$. From (3.24), we obtain (3.27). From (3.28), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{notprop}(x) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \supseteq \operatorname{newprop}(w) . \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from (3.29) that for each $w_{i} \in S_{w}$, there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x)$ such that $y$ and $w_{i}$ satisfy (3.23). Since $d\left(w_{i}\right)<d(w)$, by the induction hypothesis, we have that $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(y)=\operatorname{col}_{V}\left(w_{i}\right)$, which implies that

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(x) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \supseteq \operatorname{notprop}(y) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}=\operatorname{notprop}\left(w_{i}\right) .
$$

Together with (3.30), we obtain

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(x) \cap\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \supseteq \text { newprop }(w) \cup \bigcup_{w_{i} \in S_{w}} \operatorname{notprop}\left(w_{i}\right)=\operatorname{notprop}(w) .
$$

The above and (3.27) proves $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$.
The next lemma is crucial in the proof of Lemma 3.4.8. For the $\varphi_{w}$ formulas, a similar lemma (Corollary 3.2.12) is obtained as a corollary of the results on the connection of $\mathcal{H}(n)$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)$. However, this method cannot be generalized to the $\varphi_{w}^{\prime}$ formulas. Here we prove the next lemma directly.

Lemma 3.4.7. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ be models described above. For any point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ and any point $x$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, if $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}^{\prime}$, then there exists a unique $v \in R(w)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{1}}^{\prime}, \cdots, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{m}}^{\prime}, \tag{3.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $v \prec\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{m}\right\}$.

Proof. Suppose $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w}^{\prime}$. If for all $w_{i} \in S_{w}, \mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi_{w_{i}}^{\prime}$, then $w$ satisfies (3.31). Now suppose that for some $w_{i_{0}} \in S_{w}, \mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w_{i_{0}}}^{\prime}$. We show that there exists $v \in R(w)$ satisfying (3.31) by induction on $d(w)$.
$d(w)=1$. Then trivially $v=w$ satisfies (3.31).
$d(w)>1$. Since $\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi_{w_{i_{0}}}^{\prime}$ and $d\left(w_{i_{0}}\right)<d(w)$, by the induction hypothesis, there exists $v \in W$, such that $w_{i_{0}} R v$ and $v$ satisfies (3.31). And clearly, $w R v$.

Next, suppose $v^{\prime} \in R(w)$ also satisfies (3.31). By Lemma 3.4.6,

$$
\operatorname{col}_{V}\left(v^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime \prime}}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(v),
$$

which by the property of $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w_{0}}$ means that $v^{\prime}=v$.
Let $\mathfrak{F}$ be a finite rooted frame with a largest element $x_{0}$. For every point $x$ in $\mathfrak{F}$, we introduce a new propositional variable $p_{x}$ and define a valuation $V$ on $\mathfrak{F}$ by letting $V\left(p_{x}\right)=R(x)$. Let $n=|\mathfrak{F}|$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ such that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a p-morphic image of $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$. Since different points in $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$ have different colors, the p-morphism is injective and so $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle \cong \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$. Note that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ has a top point $t$ and $t \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}$.

The next lemma is a modification of the Jankov-de Jongh Theorem (Theorem 3.3.1) proved in the previous section. Both the statement of the lemma and the proof are generalized from those of Theorem 3.3.1.

Lemma 3.4.8. For every finite rooted frame $\mathfrak{F}$ with a largest element, let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ be the model described above. Then for every descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$,
$\mathfrak{G} \not \models \psi_{w}^{\prime}$ iff $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$.
Proof. Let $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}, V\rangle$. Suppose $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$. By Theorem 3.2.6, $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$, thus $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \psi_{w}$. By Lemma 3.4.3 and Lemma 3.4.4, we know that $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. By applying Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathfrak{G} \not \models \psi_{w}^{\prime}$ is obtained.

Suppose $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Then there exists a model $\mathfrak{N}$ on $\mathfrak{G}$ such that $\mathfrak{N} \not \vDash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Consider the generated submodel $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}=\mathfrak{N}_{V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{w}^{\prime}\right)}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ of $\mathfrak{N}$. Since $V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{w}^{\prime}\right)$ is admissible, by Lemma 2.6.13, $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}$ is admissible. Define a map $f: W^{\prime} \rightarrow W$ by taking $f(x)=v$ iff

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{1}}^{\prime}, \cdots, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models \varphi_{v_{k}}^{\prime}, \tag{3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $v \prec\left\{v_{1}, \cdots, v_{k}\right\}$.
Note that for every $x \in \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{w}$, thus by Lemma 3.4.7, there exists a unique $v \in R(w)$ satisfying (3.32). So $f$ is well-defined.

We show that $f$ is a surjective frame p-morphism of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ onto $\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Suppose $x, y \in \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}$ with $x R^{\prime} y, f(x)=v$ and $f(y)=u$. Since $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}$, we have that $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models \varphi_{v}^{\prime}$. By Lemma 3.4.7, there exists a unique $u^{\prime} \in R(v)$ such that $u^{\prime}$ and $y$ satisfy (3.32). So, since $u$ and $y$ also satisfy (3.32), by the uniqueness, $u^{\prime}=u$ and $v R u$.

Next, suppose $x \in \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}$ and $v, u \in W$ such that $f(x)=v$ and $v R u$. We show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { there exists } y \in \mathfrak{N}^{\prime} \text { such that } f(y)=u \text { and } x R^{\prime} y \text {. } \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $d(v)=1$, then $u=v$, so trivially $x R^{\prime} x$ and $f(x)=v=u$.
If $d(v)=2$, then if $u=v$, we have that (3.33) trivially holds. Now suppose $u=t$. Since $f(x)=v, v$ and $x$ satisfy (3.32), so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(v) \wedge \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(v) \wedge((q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow q) \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

It then follows that $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models(q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow q$. Note that

$$
\vdash_{\text {IPC }}((q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow q) \rightarrow \neg \neg q .
$$

Thus, $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \models \neg \neg q$, which means that there exists $y \in W^{\prime}$ such that $x R^{\prime} y$ and $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models q$. Since

$$
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(v) \wedge \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(v)
$$

we have that $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots p_{n}$, i.e. $f(y)=u$.
If $d(v)>2$, then since $x$ and $v$ satisfy (3.32), by the definition of $\varphi_{v}^{\prime}$, we must have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models \psi_{v_{i}}^{\prime}, \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $1 \leq i \leq k$. We now show by induction on $d(u)$ that (3.33) holds.
$d(u)=d(v)-1$. Then $u$ is an immediate successor of $v$ and $u$ satisfies (3.35). There are two cases. Case 1: $d(u)=2$. Then it follows from $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \models$ $\psi_{u}^{\prime}$ that there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x)$ such that $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \models \varphi_{u}^{\prime}$ and $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, y \not \vDash q$. The latter implies that $\mathfrak{N}, y \not \vDash p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{N}, y \not \vDash \varphi_{t}^{\prime}$. Thus $y$ and $u$ satisfy (3.32), and $f(y)=u$.

Case 2: $d(u)>2$. Then by the definition of $\psi_{u}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}, x \not \vDash \psi_{u}^{\prime}$ implies that there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x)$ such that $y$ and $u$ satisfy (3.32), thus $f(y)=u$.
$d(u)<d(v)-1$. Then there exists an immediate successor $v_{i_{0}}$ of $v$ such that $v_{i_{0}} R u$. By the basic step of the induction, there exists $y \in W^{\prime}$ such that $x R^{\prime} y$ and $f(y)=v_{i_{0}}$. Since $d\left(v_{i_{0}}\right)<d(v)$, by the induction hypothesis, there exists $z \in W^{\prime}$ such that $y R^{\prime} z$ and $f(z)=u$. And clearly, $x R^{\prime} z$.

For any upset $X \in \mathcal{P}$, we have that $X=\bigcup_{v \in X} R(v)$. By applying Lemma 3.4.5, Lemma 3.4.7 and using a same argument as that in the proof of Theorem 3.3.1, we can show that for every $v \in X$,

$$
f^{-1}(R(v))=V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}^{\prime}\right)
$$

So,

$$
f^{-1}(X)=f^{-1}\left(\bigcup_{v \in X} R(v)\right)=\bigcup_{v \in X} f^{-1}(R(v))=\bigcup_{v \in X} V^{\prime}\left(\varphi_{v}\right) .
$$

Since $X$ is finite, we obtain $f^{-1}(X) \in \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$.
Lastly, we show that $f$ is surjective. First, by a similar argument as above, we can show that for $w \in W$, there exists $x \in W^{\prime}$ such that $f(x)=$ $w$. Next, for every $v \in W$, we have that $w R v$. So by (3.33), there exists $y \in R^{\prime}(x) \subseteq W^{\prime}$, such that $f(y)=v$.

Hence, $f$ is a surjective frame p-morphism of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ onto $\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Then since $\mathfrak{F} \cong\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle, \mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of $\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$, which is a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$.

Now we are ready to prove Jankov's theorem on KC.
Theorem 3.4.9 (Jankov). If $L$ is an intermediate logic such that $L \nsubseteq \mathbf{K C}$, then $L \vdash \theta$ and $\mathbf{I P C} \nvdash \theta$ for some negation-free formula $\theta$.

Proof. Suppose $\chi$ is a formula satisfying

$$
L \vdash \chi \text { and } \mathbf{K C} \nvdash \chi
$$

Then there exists a finite rooted $\mathbf{K C}$-frame $\mathfrak{F}$ with a largest element such that $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \chi$. For every point $w$ in $\mathfrak{F}$, we introduce a new propositional variable $p_{w}$ and define a valuation $V$ on $\mathfrak{F}$ by letting $V\left(p_{w}\right)=R(w)$. Let $n=|\mathfrak{F}|$. By Theorem 3.2.3, there exists a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ which is a p-morphic image of $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle$. Note that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ has a largest element $t$, $t \models p_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge p_{n}$ and $\operatorname{col}_{V}(v) \neq \operatorname{col}_{V}(u)$ for all $v, u$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$.

Consider the formula $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Suppose $L \nvdash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Then there exists a descriptive frame $\mathfrak{G}$ of $L$ such that $\mathfrak{G} \not \models \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. By Lemma 3.4.8, $\mathfrak{F}$ is a p-morphic image of a generated subframe of $\mathfrak{G}$. Thus, by Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathfrak{F}$ is an $L$-frame. Thus, since $L \vdash \chi$, we have that $\mathfrak{F} \models \chi$, which leads to a contradiction.

Hence, $L \vdash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$. Note that IPC $\nvdash \psi_{w}^{\prime}$ and $\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ is negation-free, thus $\theta=\psi_{w}^{\prime}$ is the required formula.

## Chapter 4

## Subframe logics and subframe formulas

In this chapter, we summarize classic and recent results on subframe logics and subframe formulas. Subframe logics are intermediate logics that are characterized by a class of frames closed under subframes. The study of intuitionistic subframe logics was first inspired by the related results on modal subframe logics, where Fine [14] and Zakharyaschev [28] defined the subframe formulas and proved the finite model property of subframe logics. In [27], [29] (see also [6]) Zakharyaschev defined subframe formulas for intermediate logics, which are $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas. It then follows from Zakharyaschev [29], [30] (see also [6]) that subframe logics are exactly those logics axiomatized by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas. N. Bezhanishvili proved in [3] that subframe logics can also be axiomatized by NNIL-formulas. G. Bezhanishvili and Ghilardi [2] gave an algebraic approach to subframe logics by using the tools of nuclei in topos theory and proved that a variety of Heyting algebras is nuclear iff it is a subframe variety. Also in [2], an alternative proof of the finite model property of subframe logics is given from the algebraic point of view.

In Section 4.1, we give definitions of subframes of intuitionistic general frames and subframe logics. In Section 4.2, we give the definition of subframe formulas in NNIL-form, which was done in [3]. In Section 4.3, we provide a frame-based proof of the property that subreductions preserve $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas. In Section 4.4, we state the equivalent characterizations of subframe logics.

### 4.1 Subframe logics

In this section, we recall the important notions related to subframe logics. For more details on subframe logics, one may refer to [6].

Definition 4.1.1. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S, \mathcal{Q}\rangle$ be intuitionistic general frames. A partial map $f$ from $W$ onto $V$ is called a subreduction of $\mathfrak{F}$ to $\mathfrak{G}$ if it satisfies the following
(R1') For any $w, v \in \operatorname{dom}(f), w R v$ implies $f(w) S f(v)$;
(R2') $f(w) S v^{\prime}$ implies $\exists v \in \operatorname{dom}(f), w R v$ and $f(v)=v^{\prime}$;
(R3') $\forall X \in \overline{\mathcal{Q}}, f^{-1}(X) \downarrow \in \overline{\mathcal{P}}$.
Remark 4.1.2. If a subreduction is total, then (R3') is equivalent to (R3). This means that any reduction is also a subreduction and any total subreduction is also a reduction.

An intuitionistic general frame $\mathfrak{G}=\langle V, S, \mathcal{Q}\rangle$ is called a subframe of an intuitionistic general frame $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, if $\langle V, S\rangle$ is a subframe of $\langle W, R\rangle$ and the inclusion map is a subreduction, i.e.,

$$
U \in \overline{\mathcal{Q}} \text { implies } R^{-1}(U) \in \overline{\mathcal{P}} .
$$

Alternatively, we can define subframe in topological terminology. A Heyting space $\mathcal{Y}=\langle Y, \nu, S\rangle$ is called a subframe of a Heyting space $\mathcal{X}=\langle X, \tau, R\rangle$ if $\langle Y, S\rangle$ is a subframe of $\langle X, R\rangle,\langle Y, \nu\rangle$ is a subspace of $\langle X, \tau\rangle$, and
$U$ is a clopen of $\mathcal{Y}$ implies that $R^{-1}(U)$ is a clopen of $\mathcal{X}$.
Also, a correspondence between subframe and nuclei can be found in [2].
Remark 4.1.3. If $\mathfrak{G}$ is a subreduct of $\mathfrak{F}$, then $\mathfrak{G}$ is a reduct (p-morphic image) of a subframe of $\mathfrak{F}$.

There are many ways of to define a subframe logic. In subsequent sections, we will see that these characterizations are equivalent.

Definition 4.1.4. An intermediate logic $L$ is called a subframe logic, if it is characterized by a class of frames that is closed under subframes (i.e. every subframe of an $L$-frame is also an $L$-frame).

### 4.2 Subframe formulas

Subframe formulas are formulas axiomatizing subframe logics. In [3] N. Bezhanishvili defined subframe formulas in the NNIL-form. In this section, we spell out these results.

Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R\rangle$ be a finite (rooted) frame. For each point $w$ in $\mathfrak{F}$, we introduce a new propositional variable $p_{w}$ and define a valuation $V$ on $\mathfrak{F}$ by taking $V\left(p_{w}\right)=R(w)$.
Definition 4.2.1. We inductively define the subframe formula $\beta(\mathfrak{F})$. If $d(w)=1$, then let

$$
\beta(w):=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \rightarrow \bigvee \operatorname{notprop}(w)
$$

If $d(w)>1$, let $w_{1}, \cdots, w_{k}$ be all the immediate successors of $w$. Define

$$
\beta(w):=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \rightarrow\left(\bigvee \text { notprop }(w) \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{k} \beta\left(w_{i}\right)\right)
$$

Let $r$ be the root of $\mathfrak{F}$. We define the subframe formula $\beta(\mathfrak{F})$ by

$$
\beta(\mathfrak{F}):=\beta(r) .
$$

Note 4.2.2. It is easy to see that $\mathfrak{F} \not \vDash \beta(\mathfrak{F})$.
For proofs of the next two theorems, see Theorem 3.3.16 and Corollary 3.4.16 in [3].

Theorem 4.2.3. Let $\mathfrak{G}$ be a descriptive frame and $\mathfrak{F}$ be a finite rooted frame. Then

$$
\mathfrak{G} \not \models \beta(\mathfrak{F}) \text { iff } \mathfrak{G} \text { is subreducible to } \mathfrak{F} \text {. }
$$

Theorem 4.2.4. Let $L$ be an intermediate logic. Then $L$ is axiomatized by subframe formulas iff $L$ is a subframe logic.

## $4.3[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas

In this section, we state the result that $L$ is a subframe $\operatorname{logic}$ iff $L$ is axiomatized by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas. This follows from [29], [30] (see also [6]).

For an algebraic proof of the next theorem, see Corollary 9.8 in [6]. Here we give a direct proof based on frames.

Theorem 4.3.1. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{G}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be general frames. If $\mathfrak{F}$ is subreducible to $\mathfrak{G}$, then for any $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$,

$$
\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi \Longrightarrow \mathfrak{G} \models \varphi .
$$

Proof. Suppose $f$ is a subreduction of $\mathfrak{F}$ onto $\mathfrak{G}$ and $\mathfrak{G} \not \vDash \varphi$. Then there exists a model $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle\mathfrak{G}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ such that $\mathfrak{N} \not \vDash \varphi$. We define a valuation $V$ on $\mathfrak{F}$ such that $\mathfrak{M}=\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle \not \vDash \varphi$.

For any $w \in W$ and any $p \in \mathrm{Prop}$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
w \in V(p) \Longleftrightarrow \forall v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(w R v \Rightarrow f(v) \in V^{\prime}(p)\right) \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We show that the valuation $V$ is an admissible set in $\mathcal{P}$. That is to show that for any $p \in \mathrm{PROP}, V(p) \in \mathcal{P}$. Note that $W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p) \in \overline{\mathcal{Q}}$, so by (R3'), we have $f^{-1}\left(W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p)\right) \downarrow \in \overline{\mathcal{P}}$, thus it suffices to show that

$$
V(p)=W-f^{-1}\left(W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p)\right) \downarrow
$$

By (4.1), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w \in V(p) & \Longleftrightarrow \forall v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(f(v) \notin V^{\prime}(p) \Rightarrow \neg w R v\right) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \forall v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(v \in f^{-1}\left(W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p)\right) \Rightarrow \neg w R v\right) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow w \notin f^{-1}\left(W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p)\right) \downarrow \\
& \Longleftrightarrow w \in W-f^{-1}\left(W^{\prime}-V^{\prime}(p)\right) \downarrow .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, we show that (4.1) holds for any $w \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \uparrow$ and any formula $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$, and that for any $x \in \operatorname{dom}(f)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}, x \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{N}, f(x) \models \varphi . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We prove these two claims simultaneously by induction on $\varphi$.
Obviously, (4.1) holds for propositional letter, and (4.1) clearly implies that (4.2) holds for propositional letter as well. The case that $\varphi=\psi \wedge \chi$ can be proved easily. For the case that $\varphi=\psi \rightarrow \chi$, where $\psi, \chi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$, we first show that (4.1) holds.

For any $w \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \uparrow$, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathfrak{M}, w \neq \psi \rightarrow \chi \Longrightarrow & \exists v \in R(w) \text { s.t. } \mathfrak{M}, v \models \psi \text { and } \mathfrak{M}, v \not \models \chi \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists v \in R(w) \text { s.t. } \forall u \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(v R u \Rightarrow \mathfrak{N}, f(u) \models \psi) \\
& \text { and } \exists u_{v} \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(v R u_{v} \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(u_{v}\right) \not \models \chi\right) \\
& (\text { by the induction hypothesis of }(4.1)) \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists v \in R(w), \exists u_{v} \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \text { s.t. } v R u_{v}, \\
& \mathfrak{N}, f\left(u_{v}\right) \models \psi \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(u_{v}\right) \not \models \chi \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists u \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(w R u \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f(u) \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi),
\end{aligned}
$$

and that
$\exists v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(w R v$ and $\mathfrak{N}, f(v) \not \models \psi \rightarrow \chi)$
$\Longrightarrow \exists v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(w R v, \exists u^{\prime} \in S(f(v))\left(\mathfrak{N}, u^{\prime} \models \psi\right.\right.$ and $\left.\left.\mathfrak{N}, u^{\prime} \notin \chi\right)\right)$
$\Longrightarrow \exists v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(w R v, \exists u \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \cap R(v)(\mathfrak{N}, f(u) \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{N}, f(u) \not \vDash \chi))$ (by (R2'))
$\Longrightarrow \exists v \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(w R v, \exists u \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \cap R(v)(\mathfrak{M}, u \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, u \not \vDash \chi))$
(by the induction hypothesis of (4.2))
$\Longrightarrow \exists u \in R(w)$ s.t. $\mathfrak{M}, u \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, u \not \models \chi$
$\Longrightarrow \mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi$.
Therefore (4.1) is obtained. To prove (4.2), for any $x \in \operatorname{dom}(f)$, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \psi \rightarrow \chi \Longrightarrow & \exists y \in R(x) \text { s.t. } \mathfrak{M}, y \models \psi \text { and } \mathfrak{M}, y \not \vDash \chi \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists y \in R(x) \text { s.t. } \forall z \in \operatorname{dom}(f)(y R z \Rightarrow \mathfrak{N}, f(z) \models \psi) \\
& \text { and } \exists z_{y} \in \operatorname{dom}(f)\left(y R z_{y} \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \not \models \chi\right) \\
& (\text { by the induction hypothesis of }(4.1)) \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists y \in R(x), \exists z_{y} \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \text { s.t. } y R z_{y}, \\
& \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \models \psi \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \not \vDash \chi \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists z_{y} \in \operatorname{dom}(f) \cap R(x) \text { s.t. } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \models \psi \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \not \vDash \chi \\
\Longrightarrow & \exists f\left(z_{y}\right) \in V, \text { s.t. } f(x) S f\left(z_{y}\right), \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \models \psi \\
& \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, f\left(z_{y}\right) \not \vDash \chi(\text { by }(\text { R1' })) \\
\Longrightarrow & \mathfrak{N}, f(x) \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi,
\end{aligned}
$$

and that
$\mathfrak{N}, f(x) \not \models \psi \rightarrow \chi \Longrightarrow \exists y^{\prime} \in S(f(x))$, s.t. $\mathfrak{N}, y^{\prime} \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{N}, y^{\prime} \not \vDash \chi$
$\Longrightarrow \exists y \in R(x) \cap \operatorname{dom}(f)$ s.t. $\mathfrak{N}, f(y) \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{N}, f(y) \not \vDash \chi$ (by (R2'))
$\Longrightarrow \exists y \in R(x)$ s.t. $\mathfrak{M}, y \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, y \not \models \chi$
(by the induction hypothesis of (4.2))
$\Longrightarrow \mathfrak{M}, x \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi$.
Thus, (4.2) is obtained. Therefore, since $\mathfrak{N}, f(x) \not \models \varphi$ for some $x \in$ $\operatorname{dom}(f)$, by (4.2) we conclude that $\mathfrak{M}, x \not \models \varphi$. This finishes the proof.

Theorem 4.3.2. Let $L$ be an intermediate logic. Then $L$ is axiomatized by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas iff $L$ is a subframe logic.

Proof. Follows from Theorem 4.3.1 and [29], [30] (see also [6]).

### 4.4 Equivalent characterizations of subframe logics

Theorem 4.4.1. The following are equivalent:

1. $L$ is a subframe logic;
2. $L$ is axiomatized by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas;
3. L is axiomatized by NNIL-formulas;
4. there exists a set $F$ of finite frame such that every formula in $L$ refutes any frame in $F$;
5. $L$ is nuclear.

Proof. Follows from Theorem 4.2.3, 4.2.4, 4.3.2 and [2].

## Chapter 5

## The $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC

Denote the fragment of IPC consisting of formulas that have only $\wedge$ and $\rightarrow$ as connectives by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$. In this chapter, we discuss properties of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC. It is mentioned in Chapter 4 that $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas axiomatize subframe logics.

Diego proved in [12] that the variety of Hilbert algebras is locally finite. Let $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ and $[\rightarrow]^{n}$ denote the subfragment of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ and $[\rightarrow]$ for which propositional variables are only among the set $\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}$ respectively. Then dually, the $[\rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC is finite. As a consequence, we know that the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC is finite. This fact is essential in the proof that subframe logics have the finite model property.

Hendriks defined in [16] (also in [11]), a finite exact model for the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ fragment of IPC. As a matter of fact, the exact model acts as an $n$-universal model for $[\Lambda, \rightarrow]^{n}$-formulas. In Section 5.1, we reformulate this definition by making some modifications to the $n$-universal model of IPC. This enables us to prove properties of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas in an uniform manner. In particular, we give a detailed proof of Theorem 5.1.8 (corresponding to Lemma 3.2.1 in [11]) of the exactness of the $n$-universal model of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-formulas which was too sketchy in [11]. In Section 5.2, we spell out some important results on the algebras of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC, Brouwerian semilattices, including the congruence extension property.

## $5.1 n$-universal models of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas

In [16], Hendriks gave a characterization property of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas, and showed that the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC is complete with respect to all $\mathfrak{M}^{-}$ models. In this section, we reformulate these results and redefine the exact model in [16] by modifying the $n$-universal model of IPC.

We first start with some definitions.
Definition 5.1.1. Let $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a frame. Let $V:\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \rightarrow$ $\wp(W)$ be a valuation on $\mathfrak{F}, w$ be a point in $W$.

- We call $V$ maximal on a non-endpoint $w$ if and only if

$$
\operatorname{prop}(w)=\bigcap_{v \in R(w)} \operatorname{prop}(v)
$$

- We call $V$ total on $w$ if and only if $|\operatorname{prop}(w)|=n$.

A point $w$ is called an intersection point in a model $\mathfrak{M}$ if it is not an endpoint and the valuation on it is maximal. $w$ is called total if the valuation on it is total.

Lemma 5.1.2. Given a model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. If $w$ is a total point in $W$, then $\mathfrak{M}, w=\varphi$, for every $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$.

Proof. By induction on $d(w)$ and on $\varphi$.
We now show that the truth values of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas are determined only by non-intersection and non-total points. Given an $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$, let $\mathfrak{M}^{-}$ denote the submodel obtained from $\mathfrak{M}$ by eliminating all the intersection and total points. For the proof of the next theorem, one may also refer to Lemma 3.6.0.3 in [16].

Theorem 5.1.3. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a finite model and $w$ be a non-total point in $W$. Then for any $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$,

$$
\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi .
$$

Proof. Suppose $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$. We show by induction on $d(w)$ that $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi$. If $d(w)=1$, then $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-}=\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ since $w$ is not total, so the theorem holds trivially.

Figure 5.1:

$d(w)=k>1$. We prove by induction on $\varphi . \varphi=p$. Clearly, $\mathfrak{M}_{w}=p$ implies $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \models p$. Now suppose $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \models p$. Observe that every point $v \in\left(\mathfrak{M} \backslash\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-}\right)$is either a total or an intersection point. So $v \in V(p)$, which means that $\mathfrak{M}_{w} \models p$.

The case that $\varphi=\psi \wedge \chi$ holds trivially.
Now consider the case that $\varphi=\psi \rightarrow \chi$. Suppose $\mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi$. Then there exists $v \in R(w)$ such that $\mathfrak{M}, v \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, v \not \vDash \chi$. From the latter, since $\chi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$, in view of Lemma 5.1.2, we conclude that $v$ is not a total point. Thus since $d(v)<k$, by the induction hypothesis, $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{v}\right)^{-} \models \psi$ and $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{v}\right)^{-} \not \vDash \chi$. It then follows that $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi$.

Suppose $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \not \vDash \psi \rightarrow \chi$. Then there exists $v \in\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-}$such that $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-}, v \models \psi$ and $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-}, v \not \vDash \chi$. It follows that $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{v}\right)^{-} \models \psi$ and $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{v}\right)^{-} \not \vDash$ $\chi$. Then, by the induction hypothesis, $\mathfrak{M}, v \models \psi$ and $\mathfrak{M}, v \not \models \chi$. So $\mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash$ $\psi \rightarrow \chi$.

Corollary 5.1.4. The $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC is complete with respect to all $\mathfrak{M}^{-}$models.

Proof. By the finite model property of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-logics and Theorem 5.1.3.
In order to show the converse of Theorem 5.1.3, we consider the model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$of $n$-universal model with intersection and total points eliminated. Observe for example that in the 2-universal model $\mathcal{U}(2)$, for every upset of the form in Figure 5.1, the point $w$ will be eliminated in $\mathcal{U}(2)^{-}$since it is an intersection point: For this reason, it is not hard to see that for every $n \in \omega$, $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$is finite. Then by Theorem 3.2.3, $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$can be mapped p-morphically onto a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$. Clearly, $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is also finite. $\mathcal{U}(2)^{*}$ is depicted in Figure 5.2.

Figure 5.2:


Void dots and dashed lines stand for points and relations that are deleted from $\mathcal{U}(n)$ respectively.

The model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is isomorphic to the exact model in [16] for the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ fragment of IPC (see also [11]). Next, we show that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ acts as the $n$ universal model for the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC. First, we show that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is complete with respect to the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC.

Theorem 5.1.5. For every formula $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$, we have that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*} \models \varphi$ iff $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$.

Proof. " $\Leftarrow$ " holds trivially. Suppose $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*} \models \varphi$, for a formula $\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$. Since $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$, by Theorem 2.3.9, $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-} \models \varphi$.

Now, for every finite model $\mathfrak{M}$, we know by Theorem 3.2.3 that there exists a generated submodel $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ such that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{M}$. It is easy to see that $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-}$is a generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$. Thus, by Theorem 2.3.9 again, we have that $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi$.

Noting that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a finite model, we apply Theorem 5.1.3 and obtain that $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi$. So by using Theorem 2.3.9 a third time, we obtain that $\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi$, which gives $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$ by the finite model property of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ fragment of IPC.

Define a relation $\equiv$ on a set $\Theta$ of formulas by

$$
\varphi \equiv \psi \mathrm{iff} \vdash_{\mathrm{IPC}} \varphi \leftrightarrow \psi .
$$

Clearly, $\equiv$ is an equivalence relation.

The next theorem is due to Diego [12]. Here we give an alternative proof based on Theorem 5.1.5.

Theorem 5.1.6 (Diego). There are only finitely many provably non-equivalent formulas in $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$.

Proof. Note that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is finite. So there are only finitely many upsets in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$. Enumerate all upsets in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ and let $U p\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}\right)=\left\{X_{1}, \cdots, X_{k}\right\}$. Define a function $\sigma:[\Lambda, \rightarrow]^{n} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{k}$ by taking $\sigma(\varphi)=c_{1} \cdots c_{k}$, where for each $1 \leq i \leq k$

$$
c_{i}= \begin{cases}1, & \left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}\right)_{X_{i}} \models \varphi ; \\ 0, & \left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}\right)_{X_{i}} \not \equiv \varphi .\end{cases}
$$

Consider the equivalence relation $\equiv$ on the set of all $[\Lambda, \rightarrow]^{n}$-formulas. For any $\varphi, \psi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varphi \equiv \psi & \text { iff } \vdash_{\operatorname{IPC}} \varphi \leftrightarrow \psi \\
& \text { iff } \mathcal{U}(n)^{*} \models \varphi \leftrightarrow \psi \text { (by Theorem 5.1.5) } \\
& \text { iff } \sigma(\varphi)=\sigma(\psi) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Put $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}=\left\{[\varphi]: \varphi \in[\Lambda, \rightarrow]^{n}\right\}$. We have that

$$
\left|[\wedge, \rightarrow]_{\equiv}^{n}\right|=\left|\sigma\left([\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}\right)\right| \leq\left|\mathbf{C}^{k}\right|=2^{k}
$$

which means that there are up to provable equivalence only finitely many $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-formulas.

Next, for every point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$, we define two formulas $\varphi_{w}^{*}, \psi_{w}^{*} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ which do the same job in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ for the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC as the de Jongh formulas do in $\mathcal{U}(n)$ for the whole IPC. These two formulas are given in [11].

Let $w$ be a point in an $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$. We define $\operatorname{cl}(w)$ the level of color of $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}$ as

$$
c l(w)=n-|\operatorname{prop}(w)| .
$$

Observe that since $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ does not contain total points, points $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ with $\operatorname{cl}(w)=1$ are endpoints. On the other hand, endpoints $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ do not necessary satisfy that $\operatorname{cl}(w)=1$.

Definition 5.1.7. We define $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ and $\psi_{w}^{*}$ for every point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}=$ $\langle W, R, V\rangle$ inductively on $d(w)$. Let $q$ be the propositional letter in newprop $(w)$ with the least index.

If $d(w)=1$, then let

$$
\varphi_{w}^{*}:=\bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(w)^{1}
$$

and

$$
\psi_{w}^{*}:=\varphi_{w}^{*} \rightarrow q^{2} .
$$

If $d(w)>1$, we define $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ and $\psi_{w}^{*}$ by induction on $\operatorname{cl}(w)$. Assume $w \prec$ $S_{w}=\left\{w_{1}, \cdots, w_{m}\right\}$. Note that in this case $\operatorname{cl}(w)>1$. If $c l(w)=2$, then let

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varphi_{w}^{*}:= & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \Delta \text { newprop }(w) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{\psi_{w_{i}}^{*} \rightarrow q: w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\} \wedge \\
& \bigwedge\left\{\psi_{v}^{*}: v \notin R(w) \text { and } \operatorname{prop}(v) \supseteq \bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\psi_{w}^{*}:=\varphi_{w}^{*} \rightarrow q .
$$

Note that points $w_{i}$ in the third conjunct and $v$ in the forth conjunct of the above $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ satisfy $d\left(w_{i}\right)=d(v)=1$, therefore the above definition is sound.

If $c l(w)>2, \varphi_{w}^{*}$ and $\psi_{w}^{*}$ are defined in the same way as that of the case that $c l(w)=2$. Note that the $w_{i}$ in the third conjunct and $v$ in the forth conjunct of $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ in this case satisfy $\operatorname{cl}\left(w_{i}\right)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$ and $\operatorname{cl}(v)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$, therefore this definition is sound.

Note that the $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ and $\psi_{w}^{*}$ formulas defined above are in $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$. The next theorem is analogous to Theorem 3.2.6. It corresponds to Lemma 3.2.1 in [11], but the proof in [11] was too sketchy. Here we give a detailed proof.

Theorem 5.1.8. For each point $v$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$, we have that
(i) $v \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$, iff $w R v$;
(ii) $v \not \vDash \psi_{w}^{*}$, iff $v R w$.

[^3]Proof. We prove (i) and (ii) by simultaneous induction on $d(w)$.
$d(w)=1$. For (i), suppose $w R v$. Then $v=w$. Clearly, we have that $w \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$, which means that $v \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$. Now suppose $v \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$. It follows from $v \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w)$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{prop}(v) \supseteq \operatorname{prop}(w) ; \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and from $v \models \Delta$ notprop $(w)$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
v \models \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w) \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
v \not \models \bigvee \text { notprop }(w) \text {. } \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that (5.1) together with (5.2) imply that $v$ is a total point, which is impossible. Thus, we obtain (5.3), which means that

$$
\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w)
$$

Suppose $v$ is not an endpoint. Then for any $u \in R(v)$ such that $u \neq v$, since $v$ is not an intersection point, $\operatorname{col}(u)>\operatorname{col}(v)$, i.e. there exists $r \in$ $\operatorname{notprop}(v)$ such that $u \models r$. Since $v \models \Delta \operatorname{notprop}(w)$, then we must have that

$$
u \models \bigwedge \operatorname{notprop}(w)
$$

which means that $u$ is a total point; a contradiction. Hence, $v$ is an endpoint. So, by the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}, v=w$, thus $w R v$.

For (ii), suppose $v R w$. Clearly, $w \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$ and $w \not \vDash q$. Thus, $v \not \vDash \varphi_{w}^{*} \rightarrow q$. Now suppose $v \not \models \psi_{w}^{*}$. Then there exists $u \in R(v)$ such that

$$
u \neq \varphi_{w}^{*} \text { and } u \not \models q .
$$

By (i), the former of the above means that $w R u$. Then since $w$ is an endpoint, $u=w$, thus $v R w$.
$d(w)>1$. We show (i) and (ii) by induction on $\operatorname{cl}(w)$. The cases that $c l(w)=2$ and $c l(w)>2$ can be proved by similar arguments. Here we prove the two cases at the same time. First, note that in the basic step that $c l(w)=2$, we have $d(w)=2$.

For (i), suppose $w R v$. We show that $w \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$, which implies that $v \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$. Clearly,

$$
w \models \operatorname{prop}(w) \text { and } w \models \Delta \text { newprop }(w) .
$$

For any $w_{i} \in S_{w}$, if $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$, then $d\left(w_{i}\right)=d(w)-1=1$. If $c l(w)>2$, then $\operatorname{cl}\left(w_{i}\right)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$. In both cases, either by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or by (ii) of the induction step, we have that $w \not \vDash \psi_{w_{i}}^{*}$. For any $u \in R(w)$ with $u \neq w$, we have that $u=q$, since $q \in$ newprop $(w)$. Hence, we conclude that $w \models \psi_{w_{i}}^{*} \rightarrow q$.

Lastly, let $u$ be a point in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ satisfying

$$
\neg w R u \text { and } \operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\} .
$$

The latter of the above implies that $\operatorname{cl}(u)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$. If $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$, then $d(u)=1$. Therefore by the former of the above and (ii) of the basic step of the induction or (ii) of the induction step, we obtain that $w \models \psi_{u}^{*}$. Hence, $w \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$.

Now, suppose $v \models \varphi_{w}^{*}$. First, from $v \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w)$, we obtain (5.1). Next, we distinguish two cases.

Case 1: $q \in \operatorname{prop}(v)$. Then since $v \models \Delta$ newprop $(w)$, we must have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{prop}(v) \supseteq \operatorname{newprop}(w) . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Together with (5.1), we obtain

$$
\operatorname{prop}(v) \supseteq \operatorname{prop}(w) \cup \operatorname{newprop}(w)=\bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\} .
$$

The above implies that $\operatorname{cl}(v)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$. If $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$, then $d(v)=1$. Thus either by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or by (ii) of the induction step, $v \not \vDash \psi_{v}^{*}$. Thus, since

$$
\begin{equation*}
v \models \bigwedge\left\{\psi_{u}^{*}: u \notin R(w) \text { and } \operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\}\right\} \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

we must have that $w R v$ as required.
Case 2: $q \notin \operatorname{prop}(v)$. Then since $v \models \psi_{w_{i}}^{*} \rightarrow q$ for every $w_{i} \in S_{w}$, we have that $v \not \vDash \psi_{w_{i}}^{*}$. Note that either $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$ and $d\left(w_{i}\right)=1$, or $\operatorname{cl}(w)>2$ and $c l\left(w_{i}\right)<c l(w)$. Thus by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or by (ii) of the induction step, we have that $v R w_{i}$ for every $w_{i} \in S_{w}$.

Furthermore, for every $w_{i} \in S_{w}$ we have that

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(v) \supseteq \operatorname{notprop}\left(w_{i}\right) .
$$

In the meantime, since $v \models \Delta$ newprop $(w)$ and $v \not \models q$,

$$
\text { notprop }(v) \supseteq \text { newprop }(w) \text {. }
$$

Hence,

$$
\operatorname{notprop}(v) \supseteq \operatorname{newprop}(w) \cup \bigcup_{w_{i} \in S_{w}} n o t p r o p\left(w_{i}\right)=\operatorname{notprop}(w) \text {. }
$$

Then, together with (5.1), we obtain

$$
\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w)
$$

Next, we show that $w_{i}$ is an immediate successor of $v$. Suppose there exists an immediate successor $u$ of $v$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ such that $u R w_{i}$. Clearly, $\neg w R u$, since $w R u$ contradicts the fact that $w$ is an immediate successor of $w_{i}$. We distinguish two subcases.

Subcase 1: $\operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\}$. Then by (5.5), $v \models \psi_{u}^{*}$. Note that either $c l(w)=2$ and $d(u)=1$, or $\operatorname{cl}(w)>2$ and $\operatorname{cl}(u)<c l(w)$. Thus by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or (ii) of the induction step, $\neg v R u$; a contradiction.

Subcase 2: there exists $r \in \bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\}$ such that $r \notin \operatorname{prop}(u)$. Since $v R u$, we also have that $r \notin \operatorname{prop}(v)=\operatorname{prop}(w)$, thus,

$$
r \in \operatorname{newprop}(w) .
$$

On the other hand, since $u$ is not an intersection point, $\operatorname{col}(u)>\operatorname{col}(v)$, thus there exists $s$ such that

$$
s \in \operatorname{prop}(u) \text { and } s \notin \operatorname{prop}(v) .
$$

If $s \in \operatorname{newprop}(w)$, then $v \not \models s \rightarrow r$ will contradict $v \models \Delta$ newprop $(w)$.
Thus we have that $s \notin$ newprop $(w)$. Then there exists $w_{j} \in S_{w}$ such that

$$
\neg u R w_{j} \text { and } s \notin \operatorname{prop}\left(w_{j}\right) .
$$

Since either $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$ and $d\left(w_{j}\right)=1$, or $\operatorname{cl}(w)>2$ and $\operatorname{cl}\left(w_{j}\right)<\operatorname{cl}(w)$, by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or (ii) of the induction step, the former of the above implies that $u \models \psi_{w_{j}}^{*}$. Thus we have that

$$
v \not \vDash \psi_{w_{j}}^{*} \rightarrow r,
$$

which contradicts

$$
\begin{equation*}
v \models \bigwedge\left\{\psi_{w_{i}}^{*} \rightarrow q: w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\} . \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, we have proved that every $w_{i} \in S_{w}$ is an immediate successor of $v$.
Now, we show that every immediate successor of $v$ is an immediate successor of $w$. Suppose $u$ is an immediate successor of $v$ and $\neg w R u$. First, for every $w_{i} \in S_{w}$ note that either $\operatorname{cl}(w)=2$ and $d\left(w_{i}\right)=1$, or $\operatorname{cl}(w)>2$ and $c l\left(w_{i}\right)<c l(w)$. Thus since $\neg u R w_{i}$, by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or (ii) of the induction step, we have that $u \models \psi_{w_{i}}^{*}$. Then since $v \models \psi_{w_{i}}^{*} \rightarrow q$, we must have that $u \models q$. Together with the fact that $v \models \Delta$ newprop $(w)$, we obtain that $\operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq$ newprop $(w)$. On the other hand, since $v R u$, we have that $\operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \operatorname{prop}(u)=\operatorname{prop}(w)$. Thus,

$$
\operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \operatorname{newprop}(w) \cup \operatorname{prop}(w)=\bigcap\left\{\operatorname{prop}\left(w_{i}\right): w_{i} \in S_{w}\right\} .
$$

Since $\neg w R u$, by (5.5) means that $v \models \psi_{u}^{*}$. However, since $d(u)<d(w)$ and $v R u$, this contradicts the induction hypothesis.

Now suppose there exists $u^{\prime}$ such that $u^{\prime}$ is an immediate successor of $w$ and $u^{\prime} R u$. Clearly, $\neg v R u^{\prime}$, since $v R u^{\prime}$ contradicts the fact that $u$ is an immediate successor of $v$. Since either $c l(w)=2$ and $d\left(u^{\prime}\right)=1$, or $c l(w)>2$ and $\operatorname{cl}\left(u^{\prime}\right)<c l(w)$, by (ii) of the basic step of the induction, or (ii) of the induction step, $v \models \psi_{u^{\prime}}^{*}$. Hence, since $\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w), v \not \vDash \psi_{u^{\prime}}^{*} \rightarrow q$, which contradicts (5.6).

Hence, we have proved that the set of immediate successors of $w$ is the same as the set of immediate successors of $v$. Together with the fact that $\operatorname{col}(w)=\operatorname{col}(v)$, by the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$, we conclude that $w=v$, thus $w R v$.

For (ii), " $\Leftarrow$ " is proved by the same argument as in the case that $d(w)=1$. For " $\Rightarrow$ ", suppose $v \not \vDash \psi_{w}^{*}$. By a similar argument to that in the case that $d(w)=1$, we can prove that there exists $u \in R(v)$ such that $w R u$ and $u \not \vDash q$. Since $q \in \operatorname{newprop}(w)$, we must have that $w=u$. Thus, in both cases that $c l(w)=2$ and $c l(w)>2$, we have that $v R w$.

Next, we show that every upset of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is defined by a $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ formula. Since we do not allow $\vee$ in the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment, we cannot simply take the formula $\bigvee_{w \in X} \varphi_{w}^{*}$ as the formula that defines an upset $X$.

By Theorem 5.1.6, for any point $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$, there are only finitely many $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-formulas in $T h^{n}(w)$. For each upset $X$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$, we define a formula $\theta^{n}(X) \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ with finite length as

$$
\theta^{n}(X):=\bigwedge\left\{\varphi \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}: \varphi \in \bigcap_{w \in X} T h^{n}(w)\right\}
$$

In the case that $X=\{w\}$, we will only write $\theta^{n}(w)$ instead of $\theta^{n}(\{w\})$.
The following lemma is adapted from Theorem 3.6.0.12 in [16].
Lemma 5.1.9. Let $X$ be an upset of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. We have that $X=V\left(\theta^{n}(X)\right)$.

Proof. Clearly, by the definition $X \subseteq V\left(\theta^{n}(X)\right)$. For each $w \in V\left(\theta^{n}(X)\right)$, we show by induction on $d(w)$ that $w \in X$.
$d(w)=1$. Consider the formula

$$
\begin{aligned}
\eta_{w}= & \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(w) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{q \rightarrow \bigwedge\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}: q \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)\right\} \\
& \rightarrow \bigwedge\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly, $\eta_{w} \notin T h^{n}(w)$. Thus, since $w \models \theta^{n}(X)$, we may conclude that there exists $v \in X$ such that $v \not \vDash \eta_{w}$, which means that there exists $v^{\prime} \in R(v)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
v^{\prime} \models \bigwedge p r o p(w) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{q \rightarrow \bigwedge\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}: q \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)\right\} \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

$v^{\prime}$ is an endpoint. Suppose otherwise, i.e. there exists $v^{\prime \prime}$ such that $v^{\prime \prime} \neq v^{\prime}$ and $v^{\prime} R v^{\prime \prime}$. Note that by the definition of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}, \operatorname{col}\left(v^{\prime}\right) \lesseqgtr \operatorname{col}\left(v^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Thus there exists $q \in \operatorname{prop}\left(v^{\prime \prime}\right) \cap \operatorname{notprop}\left(v^{\prime}\right)$. It then follows that $q \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)$ and

$$
v^{\prime} \not \vDash q \rightarrow \bigwedge\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} .
$$

These contradict (5.7).
(5.7) implies that $\operatorname{col}\left(v^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}(v)$. Thus since in $\mathcal{U}(n)$ distinct endpoints have distinct colors, we conclude that $v^{\prime}=w$, and hence $v R w$. Thus $w \in X$ since $X$ is upward closed.
$d(w)>1$. Assume $w \notin X$. Since $w$ is not maximal, there exists $q \in$ newprop $(w)$. Consider the formula $\theta^{n}(w) \rightarrow q$. For each $v \in X$, suppose $v^{\prime} \in R(v)$ and $v^{\prime} \models \theta^{n}(w)$. From the former, since $X$ is upward closed, it follows that $v^{\prime} \in X$ and so $v^{\prime} \neq w$. Since $\varphi_{w}$ is a conjunct in $\theta^{n}(w)$, by Theorem 5.1.8, the latter implies that $w R v^{\prime}$. Observe that $v^{\prime} \models \theta^{n}(w) \rightarrow q$, which implies that $v^{\prime} \models q$, therefore we conclude that $v \models \theta^{n}(w) \rightarrow q$. This means that $\theta^{n}(w) \rightarrow q$ is a conjunct of $\theta^{n}(X)$. So, since $w \vDash \theta^{n}(X)$, we have that $w \models \theta^{n}(w) \rightarrow q$, which is impossible.

Having Theorem 5.1.5 and Lemma 5.1.9 at hand, we can view $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ as an $n$-universal model for the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$-fragment of IPC. Hereafter, we will use the symbol $\mathcal{U}(n)^{[\Lambda, \rightarrow]}$ instead of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$.

We finish this section by showing the converse of Theorem 5.1.3. For the proof of the next theorem, one may also refer to [16].
Theorem 5.1.10. Let $\varphi$ be a formula. If for every finite model $\mathfrak{M}=$ $\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and every total point $w \in W, \mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$ holds, and for every non-total point $w \in W$,

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{w} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathfrak{M}_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi,
$$

then $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$.
Proof. Let $\varphi$ be the formula described in the theorem. Consider the model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. Let $\varphi^{\prime}=\theta^{n}(V(\varphi)) \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$.

For every $w$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)$, if $w$ is total, then $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is a singleton. By the assumption and Lemma 5.1.2, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{U}(n), w \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n), w \models \varphi^{\prime} . \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $w$ is non-total, then we apply the assumption to the finite model $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ and obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi . \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $w$ is not maximal. Note that $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \cong\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}\right)_{w}$ and there exists a p-morphism $f$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$onto $\mathcal{U}(n)^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}$. Since $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$, and thus by Theorem 2.3.9 and Lemma 5.1.9,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi & \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{[\Lambda, \rightarrow]}\right)_{f(w)} \models \varphi \\
& \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{[\Lambda, \rightarrow]}\right)_{f(w)}=\varphi^{\prime} \\
& \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Observe that $f(w)$ is not total. So since $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is finite, by Theorem 5.1.3,

$$
\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \models \varphi^{\prime} \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi^{\prime}
$$

Therefore, we obtain (5.8) for all $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)$.
Now, suppose $w$ is maximal. Then we have that $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$. Since $\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}$ is a p-morphic image of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}$, by Lemma 5.1.9,

$$
\mathcal{U}(n)^{-} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]} \models \varphi^{\prime} \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)^{-} \models \varphi^{\prime}
$$

Since $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right)^{-} \cong \mathcal{U}(n)^{-}, \mathcal{U}(n)_{w}$ is finite, $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ and $w$ is not total, by Theorem 5.1.3,

$$
\mathcal{U}(n)^{-} \models \varphi^{\prime} \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi^{\prime}
$$

Therefore, together with (5.9), we obtain (5.8) for all $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)$.
By Theorem 3.2.4, (5.8) implies that $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi \leftrightarrow \varphi^{\prime}$.

### 5.2 Brouwerian semilattices

In this section, we spell out the algebraic characterization of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ fragment of IPC. The Lindenbaum algebra of the $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-fragment of IPC is the free Brouwerian semilattice on $\omega$ many generators (i.e. $\mathbf{F}_{\mathbf{B S}}(\omega)$ ). For more details on Brouwerian semilattices, one may refer to [20], [23] and [24].

Definition 5.2.1. A Brouwerian semilattice (also known as Implicative semilattice) $\mathfrak{A}=\langle A, \wedge, \rightarrow, 1\rangle$ is a meet-semilattice $\langle A, \wedge, 1\rangle$ with a binary operator $\rightarrow$, defined as:

$$
c \leq a \rightarrow b \text { iff } a \wedge c \leq b
$$

The following result was first observed by Monteiro [22].
Theorem 5.2.2. The class of all Brouwerian semilattices forms a variety, denoted by $\mathbf{B S}$.

It follows from Theorem 5.1.6 that BS is locally finite.
Definition 5.2.3. An algebra is locally finite if every finitely generated subalgebra is finite.

Theorem 5.2.4. BS is locally finite.
Proof. Follows from Lemma 5.1.6.
For a detailed proof of the following lemma, see e.g. Theorem 3.2 in [23].
Lemma 5.2.5. Let $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{B S}$. Then the filters of $\mathfrak{A}$ are in $1-1$ correspondence with congruences of $\mathfrak{A}$.

Proof. (sketch) Let $F$ be a filter of $\mathfrak{A}$. It can be showed that the relation $\theta_{F}$ defined as follows is a congruence of $\mathfrak{A}$ :

$$
a \theta_{F} b \text { iff }(a \rightarrow b) \wedge(b \rightarrow a) \in F
$$

Let $\theta \in \operatorname{Con} \mathfrak{A}$. Then the natural map $f: \mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{A} / \theta$, defined by $f(a)=$ $a / \theta$, is a surjective homomorphism. It is easy to check that $F_{\theta}=f^{-1}(1 / \theta)$ is a filter of $\mathfrak{A}$.

Remark 5.2.6. We have that $F_{\theta_{F}}=F$ and $\theta_{F_{\theta}}=\theta$.
Now we prove the congruence extension property of BS.
Theorem 5.2.7. BS has the congruence extension property.
Proof. Let $\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B} \in \mathbf{B S}$ and $\mathfrak{B}$ is a subalgebra of $\mathfrak{A}$. For every $\theta \in C o n \mathfrak{B}$, the $F_{\theta}$ defined in Lemma 5.2 .5 is a filter of $\mathfrak{B}$. Let $F^{\prime}$ be the filter of $\mathfrak{A}$ generated by $F_{\theta}$. The $\theta_{F^{\prime}}$ defined in Lemma 5.2 .5 is a congruence of $\mathfrak{A}$. Clearly, $F_{\theta}=F^{\prime} \cap B$. It then follows from Remark 5.2.6 that $\theta=\theta_{F^{\prime}} \cap B^{2}$.

Corollary 5.2.8. For any $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{B S}, \mathbf{H S}(\mathfrak{A})=\mathbf{S H}(\mathfrak{A})$.
Proof. By Theorem 2.7.7.
It is worthwhile to point out that Brouwerian semilattices turn out to coincide with subalgebras of $[\wedge, \rightarrow, 1]$-reducts of Heyting algebras. Let $\mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}$ be the operation of taking Heyting homomorphisms that preserve $\wedge$ and $\rightarrow$ only. Let $\mathbf{S}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}$ be the operation of taking subalgebras with respect to $\wedge$ and $\rightarrow$ only. Then Corollary 5.2 .8 implies that for any Heyting algebra $\mathfrak{A} \in \mathbf{H A}$, $\mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]} \mathbf{S}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}(\mathfrak{A})=\mathbf{S}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]} \mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}(\mathfrak{A})$.

One may wonder whether the operations $\mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}$ and $\mathbf{S}$ on Heyting algebras also commute. We next give a counterexample to it. First, observe that the operation $\mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}$ corresponds to taking subframes of intuitionistic frames. The next example shows that there exists a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{F}$ which is a pmorphic image of a subframe of a Kripke frame $\mathfrak{G}$, such that $\mathfrak{F}$ is not a subframe of any p-morphic image of $\mathfrak{G}$. Dually, this means that not for every Heyting algebra $\mathfrak{A}, \mathbf{H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]} \mathbf{S}(\mathfrak{A}) \subseteq \mathbf{S H}^{[\wedge, \rightarrow]}(\mathfrak{A})$.

Example 5.2.9. In Figure 5.3, the frame $F_{2}$ is a p-morphic image of a subframe of the frame $F_{0}$. However, $F_{2}$ is not a subframe of a p-morphic image of $F_{0}$. This is because the only $p$-morphic image one can get from $F_{0}$
(the only way is to apply $\beta$-reductions) is $F_{0}$ itself, or a frame obtained by identifying two or three of the end points. However, $F_{2}$ is not a subframe of any of these frames.

Figure 5.3: Example 5.2.9


- Void dots in $F_{0}$ stand for the points that are taken out in $F_{1}$.
- Void dots in $F_{1}$ stand for the points that are identified by the $\beta$ reduction.
- The void dot in $F_{2}$ stands for the point obtained by identifying the two void dots in $F_{1}$ by the $\beta$-reduction.


## Chapter 6

## NNIL-formulas

In this chapter, we discuss properties of $N N I L$-formulas. $N N I L$-formulas were studied by Visser, de Jongh, van Benthem and Renardel de Lavalette in [25]. They are formulas that have no nesting of implications to the left. Like the set of $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas, the set of NNIL-formulas is (modulo provable equivalence) finite. This was sketched in [25]. In Section 6.1, we give a detailed proof of this fact by introducing the normal form of NNIL-formulas. In Section 6.2, we introduce the notion of subsimulation of [25], and show that NNIL-formulas are preserved under subsimulations, and therefore preserved under taking submodels. As a consequence, NNIL-formulas are preserved under subframes as well. As it is mentioned in Chapter 4, it then follows from [3] that NNIL-formulas and $[\wedge, \rightarrow$ ]-formulas define the same subframe logics. In Section 6.3, we give an algorithm to translate every NNIL-formula to a $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formula in such a way that they are equivalent on frames. This indicates the fact that every subframe logic defined by NNIL-formulas is equivalent to a logic defined by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas.

It follows from [25] that if two models totally subsimulate each other, then they satisfy the same NNIL-formulas. In Section 6.4, we develop this idea and give a construction of suitable representative models of equivalence classes of rooted generated models of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ induced by two-way subsimulations. In section 6.5, we give $n$-universal models $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ of NNIL-formulas with $n$ variables. The $n$-universal models of NNIL-formulas come from the $n$-universal model of IPC. This enables us to prove properties of NNILformulas in an easy way. In particular, the theorem prove in [25] that formulas preserved under subsimulations are equivalent to NNIL-formulas becomes a natural consequence of the properties of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ of NNIL-formulas.

For comparison, note that each point in the $n$-universal model $\mathcal{U}(n)$ of IPC can be viewed also as the generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ generated by that point, and the relation on points of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ can be viewed also as the generated submodel ordering. The essential difference between $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ and $\mathcal{U}(n)$ is that in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, the generated submodel relation no longer plays a central role; instead, we consider the subsimulation relation. Each point in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is labeled by a representative model of a equivalence class of models induced by two-way subsimulations. The relation on points in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is the subsimulation ordering on the representative models. The generated submodel generated by a point in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is generally not isomorphic to the representative model of this point, however, these two models are equivalent up to the equivalence relation induced by two-way subsimulations. The author realizes and apologizes that the method to construct the model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{\text {NNIL }}$ and prove its properties is very cumbersome. The author hope to obtain simpler proofs in the future.

The representative models of points in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ may reasonably give more results in the study of NNIL-formulas and subframe logics. In section 6.6 , we discuss the connection of the model $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ and subframe logics defined by two-variable NNIL-formulas. We obtain characterization properties of frames that define subframe logics by using the structure of representative models in $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$. This suggests a method for future work on subframe logics.

### 6.1 NNIL-formulas

In this section, we give a formal definition of NNIL-formulas and prove that there are only (module provable equivalence) finitely many NNIL-formulas.

Definition 6.1.1. The smallest class satisfying the following is called the class of NNIL-formulas:

- $p \in N N I L$, for any $p \in \operatorname{Prop}$.
- $\perp \in$ NNIL.
- If $\varphi, \psi \in N N I L$, then $\varphi \wedge \psi, \varphi \vee \psi \in N N I L$.
- If $\psi \in N N I L, \varphi$ does not contain any implication or negation, then $\varphi \rightarrow \psi \in$ NNIL.

For any NNIL-formula, conjunctions and disjunctions in front of implications can be removed using:

- $\vdash((\varphi \wedge \psi) \rightarrow \chi) \leftrightarrow(\varphi \rightarrow(\psi \rightarrow \chi))$,
- $\vdash((\varphi \vee \psi) \rightarrow \chi) \leftrightarrow((\varphi \rightarrow \chi) \wedge(\psi \rightarrow \chi))$.

So, as it is mentioned in [25] that NNIL formulas can be translated modulo provable equivalence to $N N I L_{0}$ formulas which have only propositional variables to the left of implications.

Definition 6.1.2. $N N I L_{0}$ is the smallest class of formulas satisfying:

- $p \in N N I L_{0}$, for any $p \in \operatorname{Prop}$.
- $\perp \in N N I L_{0}$.
- If $\varphi, \psi \in N N I L_{0}$, then $\varphi \wedge \psi, \varphi \vee \psi \in N N I L_{0}$.
- if $\varphi \in N N I L_{0}$, then $p \rightarrow \varphi \in N N I L_{0}$ for any $p \in \operatorname{Prop}$.

We write $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$ to indicate all NNIL-formulas with variables among $\vec{p}=\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\}$ and always assume the length $|\vec{p}|=n$. In view of the definition of $N N I L_{0}$, we can define a normal form for $N N I L$-formulas.

Definition 6.1.3. A $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formula is in normal form (NF) if it is a conjunction of disjunction of atoms and formulas of the form $p \rightarrow \psi$, where $\psi \in N N I L_{0}(\vec{p} \backslash\{p\})$ and $\psi$ contains no conjunction to the right of implications.

Proposition 6.1.4. Every $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formula $\varphi$ is equivalent to some formula $\varphi^{\prime}$ in $N F$.

Proof. We start from the $N N I L_{0}(\vec{p})$-formulas and prove the proposition by induction on the complexity of $\varphi \in N N I L_{0}(\vec{p})$.

If $\varphi=p$ or $\perp$ or $T$, then the proposition holds trivially.
If $\varphi=\psi \wedge \chi$, then by the induction hypothesis, $\psi$ and $\chi$ are in NF, thus $\varphi$ is in NF.

If $\varphi=\psi \vee \chi$, then by the induction hypothesis, $\psi=\bigwedge_{i=1}^{n}\left(\bigvee_{j=1}^{m} \alpha_{i, j}\right)$ and $\chi=\bigwedge_{i=1}^{k}\left(\bigvee_{j=1}^{l} \beta_{i, j}\right)$ are in NF. By using the distributive law

$$
\vdash((\varphi \wedge \psi) \vee \chi) \leftrightarrow((\varphi \vee \chi) \wedge(\psi \vee \chi))
$$

$\varphi$ can be rewritten as $\chi=\bigwedge_{i=1}^{s}\left(\bigvee_{j=1}^{t} \gamma_{i, j}\right)$ for some $\gamma_{i, j}$ 's.
If $\varphi=p \rightarrow \psi$, then by the induction hypothesis, $\psi=\bigwedge_{i=1}^{n}\left(\bigvee_{j=1}^{m} \chi_{i, j}\right)$ is in NF. Next, note that $p \rightarrow \bigwedge_{i=1}^{n}\left(\bigvee_{j=1}^{m} \chi_{i, j}\right)$ is equivalent modulo provable equivalence to $p \rightarrow \bigwedge_{i=1}^{n} \bigvee_{j=1}^{m}\left(\chi_{i, j}[p / \top]\right)$. Lastly, by using inductively

$$
\vdash(\alpha \rightarrow \beta \wedge \gamma) \leftrightarrow(\alpha \rightarrow \beta) \wedge(\alpha \rightarrow \gamma)
$$

$\varphi$ can be rewritten as $\bigwedge_{i=1}^{r}\left(p \rightarrow \bigvee_{j=1}^{t}\left(\chi_{i, j}[p / T]\right)\right)$, which is in NF.
For every NNIL-formula we define the complexity $\sigma$ of right-nesting of $\rightarrow$ as follows:

- $\sigma(p):=\sigma(\perp):=\sigma(\mathrm{T}):=0$
- $\sigma(\alpha \wedge \beta):=\sigma(\alpha \vee \beta):=\max (\sigma(\alpha), \sigma(\beta))$
- $\sigma(\alpha \rightarrow \beta):=\max (\sigma(\alpha), \sigma(\beta)+1)$

Proposition 6.1.5. For every $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formula $\varphi$ in $N F$,

$$
\sigma(\varphi) \leq|\vec{p}| .
$$

Proof. We prove the proposition by induction on $|\vec{p}|$. Note that Boolean operators do not increase right-nesting complexity. We only show that for each formula $p \rightarrow \psi$ in NF, we have

$$
\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi) \leq|\vec{p}| .
$$

If $|\vec{p}|=1$, then the only $N N I L_{0}(\vec{p})$ formula that is in NF is $p \rightarrow \perp$. Clearly $\sigma(p \rightarrow \perp)=1$.

If $|\vec{p}|=n+1$, then for each formula $p \rightarrow \psi$ in NF, by the induction hypothesis, $\sigma(\psi) \leq n$, so $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi) \leq n+1$.

The basic idea of a proof of the following proposition was sketched in the proof of Theorem 2.2 in [25]. Here we give a detailed calculation.

Proposition 6.1.6. There are only finitely many NNIL $(\vec{p})$-formulas in $N F$ that are of the form $p \rightarrow \psi$.

Proof. Let $|\vec{p}|=n$. We show by induction on $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi)$.
If $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi)=1$, then the set of formulas in NF of the form

$$
p \rightarrow \perp
$$

has the cardinality $n$. The set of formulas in NF of the form

$$
p \rightarrow q_{1} \vee q_{2} \vee \cdots \vee q_{k}
$$

where $k \leq n-1$, has the cardinality $n \cdot C_{n-1}^{k}$. Thus, the cardinality $\operatorname{sum}(1)$ of the set of formulas in NF of the form $p \rightarrow \psi$ with $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi)=1$ is

$$
\operatorname{sum}(1)=n+\sum_{k \leq n-1} n \cdot C_{n-1}^{k} .
$$

Suppose $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi)=m+1$. Then by Proposition 6.1.5, $m+1 \leq n$. Let

$$
\operatorname{sum}(\leq m)=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \operatorname{sum}(i)
$$

All formulas $p \rightarrow \psi$ in NF with $\sigma(p \rightarrow \psi)=m+1$ are of the form

$$
p \rightarrow \chi_{0} \vee \bigvee_{i=1}^{k} \chi_{i}
$$

where $\sigma\left(\chi_{0}\right)=m$ and $0 \leq k \leq \operatorname{sum}(\leq m)-1$. Thus

$$
\operatorname{sum}(m+1)=n \cdot \operatorname{sum}(m) \cdot\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\operatorname{sum}(\leq m)-1} C_{\text {sum }(\leq m)-1}^{i}+1\right)
$$

Hence, there are in total $\sum_{m=1}^{n} \operatorname{sum}(m)$ many $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas in NF that are of the form $p \rightarrow \psi$.
Corollary 6.1.7. There are (modulo provable equivalence) only finitely many $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas.
Proof. Since by using $\wedge$ and $\vee$, only finitely many new non-equivalent formulas can be produced, by Proposition 6.1.6, there are (modulo provable equivalence) only finitely many $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas that are in NF. So by Proposition 6.1.4, there are (modulo provable equivalence) only finitely many NNIL ( $\vec{p}$ )-formulas.

Consider the equivalence relation $\equiv$ on $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$. By Corollary 6.1.7, the set $N N I L(\vec{p})_{\equiv}=\{[\varphi]: \varphi \in \operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})\}$ is finite.

### 6.2 NNIL-formulas and subsimulations

This section is based on [25]. By the standard translation, we can translate NNIL-formulas to first-order formulas. These first-order formulas are $\Pi_{1-}$ formulas. We know that $\Pi_{1}$-formulas are preserved in substructures (see e.g. [17]). Thus, NNIL-formulas are preserved under taking submodels. In this section, we introduce subsimulations defined in [25] and spell out the result that $N N I L$-formulas are exactly those formulas preserved under subsimulations.

Definition 6.2.1. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be $n$-models. A relation $Z$ on $W^{\prime} \times W$ is a subsimulation if it satisfies the following conditions.
(S1) If $v Z w$, then $\mathfrak{N}, v \models p_{i}$ iff $\mathfrak{M}, w \models p_{i}$, for each $1 \leq i \leq n$.
(S2) If $v Z w$ and $v R^{\prime} v^{\prime}$, then there exists $w^{\prime} \in W$ such that $v^{\prime} Z w^{\prime}$ and $w R w^{\prime}$.
$Z$ is total if for any $v \in W^{\prime}$, there exists $w \in W$ such that $v Z w$. We denote $\mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$ and say that " $\mathfrak{M}$ subsimulates $\mathfrak{N}$ ", if there exists a total subsimulation $Z$ of $\mathfrak{N}$ in $\mathfrak{M}$.

Remark 6.2.2. If $\mathfrak{N}$ is a submodel of $\mathfrak{M}$, then the inclusion map is a subsimulation.

Remark 6.2.3. If $f$ is a subreduction between two models (a subreduction preserving propositional variables), then $f^{-1}$ is a subsimulation.

The proof of the next theorem is adapted from Theorem 6.4 in [25].
Theorem 6.2.4. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be n-models, and $Z: \mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$. If $v Z w$, then for any $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formula $\varphi, \mathfrak{M}, w \models \varphi$ implies that $\mathfrak{N}, v \models \varphi$.

Proof. The theorem is proved by induction on the complexity of a $N N I L_{0}(\vec{p})$ formula $\varphi$. The only non-trivial case is that $\varphi=p \rightarrow \psi$ for some $\psi \in$ $N N I L_{0}(\vec{p})$. Suppose $v Z w$ and $\mathfrak{N}, v \not \vDash p \rightarrow \psi$. Then there exists $v^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$ such that $v R^{\prime} v$,

$$
\mathfrak{N}, v^{\prime} \models p \text { and } \mathfrak{N}, v^{\prime} \not \models \psi .
$$

By (S2), we have that there exists $w^{\prime} \in W$ such that $w R w^{\prime}$ and $v^{\prime} Z w^{\prime}$. Thus, by (S1), $\mathfrak{M}, w^{\prime} \models p$. By the induction hypothesis, $\mathfrak{M}, w^{\prime} \not \vDash \psi$. Since $w R w^{\prime}$, we conclude that $\mathfrak{M}, w \not \vDash p \rightarrow \psi$.

Corollary 6.2.5. If $\mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$, then $T h_{\text {NNIL }(\vec{p})}(\mathfrak{M}) \subseteq T h_{N N I L(\vec{p})}(\mathfrak{N})$. In particular, NNIL formulas are preserved under taking submodels.

The next theorem is proved in [25]. We will prove it at the end of this chapter in Theorem 6.5.14 as a corollary of the properties of the $n$-universal of $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$ formulas.
Theorem 6.2.6. If $\varphi$ satisfies that for any models $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ with $\mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$,

$$
\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi \Rightarrow \mathfrak{N} \models \varphi,
$$

then $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$.
Theorem 6.2.7. The following are equivalent:
(1) $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to $a$ NNIL-formula;
(2) if $\mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$, then $\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi$ implies $\mathfrak{N} \models \varphi$;

### 6.3 NNIL-formulas and $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas

In this section, we give an algorithm to translate every NNIL-formula to a $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formula in such a way that they are equivalent on frames. This shows that every subframe logic defined by NNIL-formulas is equivalent to a subframe logic defined by $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas.

Lemma 6.3.1. For any rooted Kripke model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$, any formulas $\varphi, \psi$,

$$
\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi \vee \psi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{M} \models \varphi \text { or } \mathfrak{M} \models \psi
$$

Proof. " $\Longleftarrow$ " holds trivially. For " $\Longrightarrow$ ", suppose $\mathfrak{M} \vDash \varphi \vee \psi$. Then, for the root $r \in W$, we have $r \models \varphi \vee \psi$, which means either $r \models \varphi$ or $r \models \psi$. It then follows from the persistency of $V$ that either for any $w \in W, w \models \varphi$, or for any $w \in W, w \models \psi$. That is either $\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi$ or $\mathfrak{M} \models \psi$.

By substituting $\perp$ by a new propositional variable, we can turn every NNIL-formula into a negation-free NNIL-formula in such a way that they are equivalent on frames.

Lemma 6.3.2. For any $\varphi \in$ NNIL, there exists a negation-free formula $\varphi_{0} \in$ NNIL such that for any general frame $\mathfrak{F}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{F} \models \varphi_{0} . \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Since NNIL-formulas can be translated into $N N I L_{0}$-formulas, it suffices to prove the lemma for $N N I L_{0}$ formulas. For any $\varphi \in N N I L_{0}$, let $\varphi_{0}=\varphi[\perp / q]$, where $q$ is a new variable. Note that $\varphi_{0}$ is still in $N N I L_{0}$.

First, by a similar argument to the proof of Lemma 3.4.3, we can prove that for any $\varphi \in N N I L$, any $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and any $w \in W$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow\left\langle\mathfrak{F}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle, w \not \vDash \varphi_{0}, \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
V^{\prime}(p)= \begin{cases}V(p), & p \neq q \\ \emptyset, & p=q\end{cases}
$$

(Note that $V^{\prime}(q)=\emptyset \in \mathcal{P}$.)
Next, we show by induction on $\varphi \in N N I L$ that for any $\mathfrak{F}=\langle W, R, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and any $w \in W$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \vDash \varphi_{0} \Longrightarrow\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \vDash \varphi \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The cases that $\varphi=p$ or $\perp$ or $\psi \wedge \chi$ or $\psi \vee \chi$ are trivial.
$\varphi=p \rightarrow \psi$. Suppose $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \vDash p \rightarrow \psi_{0}$. Then there exists $v \in R(w)$ such that $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, v \models p$ and $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, v \not \models \psi_{0}$. By the induction hypothesis, we have that $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, v \not \models \psi$. Thus $\langle\mathfrak{F}, V\rangle, w \not \vDash p \rightarrow \psi$.

Lastly, observe that the " $\Longleftarrow$ " of (6.1) follows from (6.2), and the " $\Longrightarrow$ " of (6.1) follows from (6.3). This finishes the proof.

Theorem 6.3.3. For any $\varphi \in$ NNIL, there exists a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ such that for any general frame $\mathfrak{F}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi \Longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{F} \models \varphi^{\prime} . \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. First, by Lemma 6.3.2, for any $N N I L_{0}$-formula $\varphi$, there exists a negationfree formula $\varphi_{0}$ which is also in $N N I L_{0}$ such that (6.1) holds.

Next, for any $\varphi_{0} \in N N I L_{0}$, we define a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ as follows:

- If $\varphi_{0}=p$, let $\varphi^{\prime}=\varphi_{0}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \vee \chi$, let $\varphi^{\prime}=\left(\psi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \rightarrow q$, where $q$ does not occur in $\psi^{\prime}$ or $\chi^{\prime}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \wedge \chi$, let $\varphi^{\prime}=\psi^{\prime} \wedge \chi^{\prime}$, where we do not introduce the same new variable for $\psi^{\prime}$ and $\chi^{\prime}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=p \rightarrow \psi$, let $\varphi^{\prime}=p \rightarrow \psi^{\prime}$, where we do not introduce $p$ as a new variable for $\psi^{\prime}$.

We show " $\Longrightarrow$ " of (6.4) by showing by induction a stronger result that for any model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M} \vDash \varphi_{0} \Longrightarrow \mathfrak{M} \vDash \varphi^{\prime} . \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The cases that $\varphi_{0}=p$ or $\psi \wedge \chi$ are trivial.
If $\varphi_{0}=p \rightarrow \psi$, suppose $\mathfrak{M} \models p \rightarrow \psi$. Then for each $w \in W$ such that $\mathfrak{M}, w \models p$, we have that $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \psi$. It follows that $\mathfrak{M}_{w} \models \psi$, which by the induction hypothesis implies that $\mathfrak{M}_{w} \models \psi^{\prime}$. Thus $\mathfrak{M}, w \models \psi^{\prime}$ and $\mathfrak{M} \models p \rightarrow \psi^{\prime}$.

If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \vee \chi$, suppose $\mathfrak{M} \vDash \psi \vee \chi$. Note that $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{X}$ for some set of points $X \subseteq W$. Then we have $\mathfrak{M}_{x}=\psi \vee \chi$ for each $x \in X$. By Lemma 6.3.1, we have $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi$ or $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \chi$. Without loss of generality, we may assume that $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi$. Then, by the induction hypothesis, $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi^{\prime}$. For any $w \in R(x)$ with

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{x}, w \models\left(\psi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right),
$$

we have that $\mathfrak{M}_{x}, w \models q$, which implies $\mathfrak{M}_{x}, w \models\left(\psi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \rightarrow q$. Thus, $\mathfrak{M}, w \models\left(\psi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime} \rightarrow q\right) \rightarrow q$.

To show the direction " $\Longleftarrow$ ", we first define a formula $\varphi^{\prime \prime}$ for every formula $\varphi_{0} \in N N I L_{0}$ as follows:

- If $\varphi_{0}=p$, let $\varphi^{\prime \prime}=\varphi_{0}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \vee \chi$, let $\varphi^{\prime \prime}=\left(\psi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right) \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \wedge \chi$, let $\varphi^{\prime \prime}=\psi^{\prime \prime} \wedge \chi^{\prime \prime}$.
- If $\varphi_{0}=p \rightarrow \psi$, let $\varphi^{\prime \prime}=p \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime}$.

Next, we show by induction on $\varphi_{0}$ that for any model $\mathfrak{M}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi^{\prime \prime} \Longrightarrow \mathfrak{M} \models \varphi_{0} \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

By a similar argument to the one used in proving (6.5), we can prove (6.6) for the cases that $\varphi_{0}=p$ or $\psi \wedge \chi$ or $p \rightarrow \psi$.

If $\varphi_{0}=\psi \vee \chi$, suppose $\mathfrak{M} \vDash\left(\psi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right) \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}$. Since $\vdash_{\text {IPC }}\left(\psi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right) \wedge\left(\chi^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}\right)$, we must have that $\mathfrak{M} \models \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}$.

Figure 6.1: Example 6.3.5


Propositional variables that are shown at a point point are true at the point. Those that are not shown are false at the point.

Note that $\mathfrak{M}=\mathfrak{M}_{X}$ for some set of points $X \subseteq W$. Thus, for each $x \in X$, $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi^{\prime \prime} \vee \chi^{\prime \prime}$, which by lemma 6.3.1 implies $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi^{\prime \prime}$ or $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \chi^{\prime \prime}$. Then by the induction hypothesis, $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \vDash \psi$ or $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \chi$, so by lemma 6.3.1 again, $\mathfrak{M}_{x} \models \psi \vee \chi$. Thus $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \psi \vee \chi$.

Now, suppose $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi^{\prime}$ for any general frame $\mathfrak{F}$ and $\varphi_{0} \in N N I L_{0}$. Note that $\varphi^{\prime \prime}$ is a formula obtained from $\varphi^{\prime}$ by replacing all occurrences of some propositional variables with some formulas. Thus, we have $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi^{\prime \prime}$. Then, by (6.6), $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi_{0}$, which by (6.1) means that $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi$.

Corollary 6.3.4. NNIL-formulas are preserved under subreductions.
Proof. Let $f$ be a subreduction from $\mathfrak{F}$ onto $\mathfrak{G}$ and $\varphi \in$ NNIL. Suppose $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi$. Let $\varphi^{\prime} \in[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ be the formula in Theorem 6.3.3, then $\mathfrak{F} \models \varphi^{\prime}$, which by Theorem 4.3.1 implies that $\mathfrak{G} \models \varphi^{\prime}$. By Theorem 6.3.3 again, we obtain $\mathfrak{G} \models \varphi$.

We finish this section by giving an example showing that subsimulations do not preserve $[\wedge, \rightarrow$-formulas. Thus, it follows from Theorem 6.2.7 that [ $\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas are not provably equivalent to NNIL-formulas.

Example 6.3.5. The formula $(p \rightarrow q) \rightarrow r$ is in $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$, but not in NNIL. Consider the two models shown in Figure 6.1. The model $N$ is a submodel of the model $M$. We have $M \models(p \rightarrow q) \rightarrow r$, however $N \not \vDash(p \rightarrow q) \rightarrow r$.

Figure 6.2: $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$


### 6.4 Equivalence of models under subsimulations

In this section, we discuss equivalence relations on models under subsimulations.

For every $n \in \omega$, there exists a model $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ subsimulating every $n$-model. $\mathfrak{U}^{1}, \mathfrak{U}^{2}$ and $\mathfrak{U}^{3}$ are shown in Figure 6.2. More generally, $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ is defined as follows:

Definition 6.4.1. Define $\mathfrak{U}^{n}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ by taking

$$
W=\mathbf{C}^{n}, R=\leq \text { and } \operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=w
$$

Now, we show that $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ subsimulates every $n$-model.
Theorem 6.4.2. Let $\mathfrak{M}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be a n-model, and $\mathfrak{U}^{n}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. There exists a total subsimulation $Z: \mathfrak{M} \preceq \mathfrak{U}^{n}$. In particular, $\mathcal{U}(n) \preceq \mathfrak{U}^{n}$.
Proof. Define a relation $Z$ on $W^{\prime} \times W$ by

$$
Z=\bigcup_{s \in \mathbf{C}^{n}} Z_{s}
$$

where for every $s \in \mathbf{C}^{n}$,

$$
Z_{s}=\left\{\left(w^{\prime}, w\right): w^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}, w \in W, \operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}\left(w^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s\right\}
$$

Clearly, $Z$ is total. We show that $Z$ is a subsimulation. Clearly, (S1) is satisfied. For (S2), for any $w^{\prime}, v^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$ and $w \in W$ such that $w^{\prime} Z w$ and $w^{\prime} R v^{\prime}$, observe that

$$
\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}\left(v^{\prime}\right) \geq \operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}\left(w^{\prime}\right)
$$

By the definition of $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$, for the color $s=\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}\left(v^{\prime}\right) \geq \operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}\left(w^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)$ there exists a point $v \in W$ such that $w R v$ and $\operatorname{col}_{V}(v)=s$. Thus, by the definition of $Z, v^{\prime} Z v$.

Theorem 6.4.3. Let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}=\left\langle W_{0}, R_{0}, V_{0}\right\rangle, \mathfrak{M}_{1}=\left\langle W_{1}, R_{1}, V_{1}\right\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{2}=$ $\left\langle W_{2}, R_{2}, V_{2}\right\rangle$ be $n$-models. Suppose $Z_{0}: \mathfrak{M}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{1}$ and $Z_{1}: \mathfrak{M}_{1} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}$. Then $Z_{1} \circ Z_{0}: \mathfrak{M}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}$.

Proof. Clearly, $Z_{1} \circ Z_{0}$ is total. ( S 1 ) is trivially satisfied. For ( S 2 ), suppose $w_{0} Z_{1} \circ Z_{0} w_{2}$ and $w_{0} R_{0} v_{0}$. Then there exists $w_{1} \in W_{1}$ such that $w_{0} Z_{0} w_{1}$ and $w_{1} Z_{1} w_{2}$. By (S2) of $Z_{0}$, there exists $v_{1} \in W_{1}$ such that $v_{0} Z_{0} v_{1}$ and $w_{1} R_{1} v_{1}$. Next, by (S2) of $Z_{1}$, there exists $v_{2} \in W_{2}$ such that $v_{1} Z_{1} v_{2}$ and $w_{2} R_{1} v_{2}$. Thus $v_{0} Z_{1} \circ Z_{0} v_{2}$.

Corollary 6.4.4. The relation $\preceq ~ i s ~ t r a n s i t i v e . ~$
As in [25], we define a relation $\equiv$ between two models by

$$
\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N} \text { iff } \mathfrak{M} \preceq \mathfrak{N} \text { and } \mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M} .
$$

Clearly, $\equiv$ is reflexive and symmetric. By Corollary 6.4.4, $\equiv$ is also transitive. So $\equiv$ is an equivalence relation.

By the definition of $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$, it is easy to see that $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ is a generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)$, thus $\mathfrak{U}^{n} \preceq \mathcal{U}(n)$. So together with Theorem 6.4.2, we obtain that $\mathfrak{U}^{n} \equiv \mathcal{U}(n)$.

Theorem 6.4.5. If $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N}$, then $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ satisfy the same $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$ formulas.

Proof. By Corollary 6.2.5.
Let $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))$ be the set of all finite rooted generated submodels of $\mathcal{U}(n)$. Consider the set

$$
\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}=\{[\mathfrak{M}]: \mathfrak{M} \in \operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))\}
$$

For each equivalence class $[\mathfrak{M}] \in \operatorname{Sub}(\mathfrak{M})_{\equiv \text {, }}$, we want to choose a "small" enough model as its representative. The model $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ is an example of such a "small" model. We next give an algorithm to construct the "small" representative $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ of each $[\mathfrak{M}] \in \operatorname{Sub}(\mathfrak{M})_{\equiv}$. First, we need to introduce some notations.

For any two models $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{N}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$. Put

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathfrak{M}^{\prime}=\langle W, R, V \upharpoonright P\rangle, \\
\mathfrak{N}^{\prime}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime} \upharpoonright P\right\rangle,
\end{gathered}
$$

where $P$ is a set of propositional variables and $|P|=m$.

- If $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \cong \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}$, then we say that $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ are m-isomorphic, in symbols $\mathfrak{M} \cong{ }^{m} \mathfrak{N}$.
- If $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \equiv \mathfrak{N}^{\prime}$, then we denote $\mathfrak{M} \equiv^{m} \mathfrak{N}$.

Note that when we use the symbols $\cong^{m}$ and $\equiv^{m}$, the elements of the set $P$ will always be clear from the context.

For each equivalence class $[\mathfrak{N}]$ in $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}$, we are going to construct the representative model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ inductively in four steps. The four steps involve four kinds of reductions and the technique of unraveling. Take a model $\mathfrak{M}$ in $[\mathfrak{N}]$ : by unraveling and applying each kind of reduction, we reduce $\mathfrak{M}$ to a smaller model in such a way that the resulting model is still in $[\mathfrak{M}]$.

We now start with the first step. The first step involves the first kind of reduction. By transforming any finite rooted $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$ to $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$, we identify all points of $\mathfrak{M}$ with the same color $s$ as the root.

To be precise, for every finite rooted $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ with the root $r$ and $\operatorname{col}_{V}(r)=s$, we define a model $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ (see Figure 6.3) by taking

$$
\begin{gathered}
W^{\prime}=W \backslash\left\{w \in W: \operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s\right\} \cup\left\{r^{\prime}\right\}, \\
R^{\prime}=R \upharpoonright W^{\prime} \cup\left\{\left(r^{\prime}, x\right):(w, x) \in R \text { and } \operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s\right\}, \\
\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}=\operatorname{col}_{V} \upharpoonright W^{\prime} \cup\left\{\left(r^{\prime}, s\right)\right\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Lemma 6.4.6. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$ be models described above. Then $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$.
Proof. Note that from the definition of $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$, we can easily see that there exists an isomorphism $f: W \backslash\left\{w \in W: \operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s\right\} \rightarrow W^{\prime} \backslash\left\{r^{\prime}\right\}$. To show that $\mathfrak{M} \preceq \overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$, define a relation $Z$ on $W \times W^{\prime}$ by

$$
Z=\left\{\left(w, r^{\prime}\right): \operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s\right\} \cup\left\{(v, f(v)): \operatorname{col}_{V}(v) \neq s\right\}
$$

Clearly, (S1) holds. For (S2), suppose $w Z w^{\prime}$ and $w R v$ for $w, v \in W$ and $w^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$. There are two cases. Case 1: $\operatorname{col}_{V}(w)=s$. Then by the definition

Figure 6.3: $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$

of $Z, w^{\prime}=r^{\prime}$. If $\operatorname{col}_{V}(v)=s$, then we have that for $r^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}, v Z r^{\prime}$ and $r^{\prime} R^{\prime} r^{\prime}$. If $\operatorname{col}_{V}(v) \neq s$, then we have that for $f(v) \in W^{\prime}, v Z f(v)$ and $r^{\prime} R^{\prime} f(v)$.

Case 2: $\operatorname{col}_{V}(w) \neq s$. Then by the definition of $Z, w^{\prime}=f(w)$. So we have that for $f(v) \in W^{\prime}, v Z f(v)$ and $f(w) R^{\prime} f(v)$.

To show that $\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$, define a relation $Z$ on $W^{\prime} \times W$ by

$$
Z=\left\{\left(r^{\prime}, r\right)\right\} \cup\left\{(f(w), w): \operatorname{col}_{V}(w) \neq s\right\} .
$$

It is easy to see that $Z$ is total and both (S1) and (S2) hold.
In the second step, we unravel the $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}$ obtained from the first step to a tree-like $n$-model $\mathfrak{N}$. It is easy to prove that $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N}$.

Let $\mathfrak{M}$ be a finite rooted tree-like model with the root $r$ and $r \prec S_{r}$ obtained from the second step. In the third step, the second kind of reduction replaces each generated submodel $\mathfrak{M}_{w}\left(w \in S_{r}\right)$ of $\mathfrak{M}$ by a $n-|\operatorname{prop}(w)|-$ equivalent representative $n-|\operatorname{prop}(w)|$-model. The resulting model is denoted by $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}$.

To be precise, let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a finite rooted tree-like $n$-model and $w \in W$ be a point with $|\operatorname{prop}(w)|=k$. Then there exists an $n-k$-model $\mathfrak{N}$ such that $\mathfrak{M}_{w} \cong{ }^{n-k} \mathfrak{N}$ via an isomorphism $f$. Let $\mathfrak{N}_{0}=\left\langle W_{0}, R_{0}, V_{0}\right\rangle$ be the representative $n-k$ model in $[\mathfrak{N}]$. It is not hard to see by induction that there exists a surjective functional subsimulation $g$ from $\mathfrak{N}$ onto $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Note that since $\mathfrak{M}$ is a tree-like model, for any $v \in S_{r}$ such that $v \neq w$, $R(w) \cap R(v)=\emptyset$. Now, define an $n$-model $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ by taking

$$
\begin{gathered}
W^{\prime}=(W \backslash R(w)) \cup W_{0}, \\
R^{\prime}=R \upharpoonright W^{\prime} \cup R_{0} \cup\left\{(r, x): x \in W_{0}\right\},
\end{gathered}
$$

$$
\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}(x)= \begin{cases}\operatorname{col}_{V}(x), & x \notin W_{0} ; \\ \operatorname{col}_{V}\left(f^{-1}(y)\right), \text { where } y \in g^{-1}(x) & x \in W_{0} .\end{cases}
$$

In the above definition of $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}$, note that for all $x \in W_{0}$, for any $y, z \in g^{-1}(x)$, $\operatorname{col}_{V}\left(f^{-1}(y)\right)=\operatorname{col}_{V}\left(f^{-1}(z)\right)$, thus this definition is sound.
Lemma 6.4.7. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}$ be the models defined above. Then $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}$. Proof. Note that from the definition of $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}$, we can easily see that there exists an isomorphisms $h: W \backslash R(w) \rightarrow W^{\prime} \backslash W_{0}$. To show that $\mathfrak{M} \preceq \overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w}$, define a relation $Z$ on $W \times W^{\prime}$ by

$$
Z=\{(x, h(x)): x \notin R(w)\} \cup\{(y, g(f(y))): y \in R(w)\}
$$

For (S1), clearly for $x \notin R(w), \operatorname{col}_{V}(x)=\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}(h(x))$ since $h$ is an isomorphism. If $x \in R(w)$, by the definition of $\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}$, we have that

$$
\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}(g(f(x)))=\operatorname{col}_{V}\left(f^{-1}(f(x))\right)=\operatorname{col}_{V}(x) .
$$

For (S2), suppose $x Z x^{\prime}$ and $x R y$ for $x, y \in W$ and $x^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$. There are two cases. Case 1: $y \notin R(w)$. Then $x \notin R(w)$ and $x^{\prime}=h(x)$. So there exists $h(y) \in W^{\prime}$ such that $h(x) R^{\prime} h(y)$ and $y Z h(y)$.

Case 2: $y \in R(w)$. Then either $x=r$ and $x^{\prime}=h(r)$, or $x \in R(w)$ and $x^{\prime}=g(f(x))$. So in both cases, by the definition of $R^{\prime}$ and $Z$, for $g(f(y)) \in W^{\prime}$, we have that $x^{\prime} R^{\prime} g(f(y))$ and $y Z g(f(y))$.

To show that $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{M}}^{w} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$, consider the relation $Z^{-1}$ on $W^{\prime} \times W$. It is easy to see that $Z^{-1}$ is a total subsimulation.

In the fourth step, for the finite rooted tree-like model $\mathfrak{M}$ obtained from the third step, the third kind of reduction deletes every generated submodel of some point $v \in S_{r}$ that can be subsimulated by another generated submodel of some point $w \in S_{r}$.

To be precise, let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a finite rooted tree-like model with the root $r$. Suppose $w, v \in S_{r}$, and $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{v}$ are two generated submodels of $\mathfrak{M}$ with a subsimulation $Z_{0}$ such that $Z_{0}: \mathfrak{M}_{v} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{w}$. Note that by the construction of the third step, $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{v}$ can both be viewed as $n-k$ models for some $k \in \omega$. It can be proved by induction that $Z_{0}$ is total and functional. Note also that since $\mathfrak{M}$ is a tree-like model, $R(v) \cap R(w)=\emptyset$. Define a model $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ (see Figure 6.4.8) by taking

$$
W^{\prime}=W \backslash R(v), R^{\prime}=R \upharpoonright W^{\prime}, \operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}}=\operatorname{col}_{V} \upharpoonright W^{\prime}
$$

Figure 6.4: $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$


Figure 6.5: Representative models for 1-models


Lemma 6.4.8. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$ be models defined above. Then $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$.
Proof. Note that from the definition of $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$, we can easily see that there exists an isomorphism $f: W \backslash R(v) \rightarrow W^{\prime}$. To show that $\mathfrak{M} \preceq \widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$, define a relation $Z$ on $W \times W^{\prime}$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
Z= & \{(x, f(x)): x \notin R(v)\} \cup \\
& \left\{\left(y, f\left(Z_{0}(y)\right)\right): y \in R(v)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly, (S1) is satisfied. For (S2), suppose $x Z x^{\prime}$ and $x R y$ for $x, y \in W$ and $x^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$. There are two cases. Case 1: $y \notin R(v)$. Then there exists $y^{\prime}=f(y)$ in $W^{\prime}$ such that $x^{\prime} R^{\prime} y^{\prime}$ and $y Z y^{\prime}$.

Case 2: $y \in R(v)$. Then either $x=r$ and $x^{\prime}=f(r)$, or $x \in R(v)$ and $x^{\prime}=f\left(Z_{0}(x)\right)$. So by the definition of $R^{\prime}$ and $Z$, for $f\left(Z_{0}(y)\right) \in W^{\prime}$, in both cases we have that $x^{\prime} R^{\prime} f\left(Z_{0}(y)\right)$ and $y Z f\left(Z_{0}(y)\right)$.

To show that $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$, clearly, the isomorphism $f^{-1}: W^{\prime} \rightarrow W \backslash R(v)$ is a total subsimulation from $\widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$ to $\mathfrak{M}$.

In the last step, for the finite rooted tree-like model $\mathfrak{M}$ obtained from the fourth step, the fourth kind of reduction identifies isomorphic subtrees.

To be precise, let $\mathfrak{M}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ be a finite rooted tree-like model. Suppose $w, v \in W$, and $\mathfrak{M}_{w}$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{v}$ are two isomorphic subtrees. Define a model $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ by taking

$$
\begin{aligned}
W^{\prime}=W \backslash R(v), R^{\prime} & =R \upharpoonright W^{\prime} \cup\{(x, w): x R v\} \\
\operatorname{col}_{V^{\prime}} & =\operatorname{col}_{V} \upharpoonright W^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 6.4.9. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$ be models defined above. Then $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \widetilde{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$.
Proof. Note that from the definition of $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$, we can easily see that there exist isomorphisms $f: W \backslash R(v) \rightarrow W^{\prime}$ and $g: R(v) \rightarrow R(w)$. Define a function $h: W \rightarrow W^{\prime}$ by

$$
h(x)= \begin{cases}f(x), & x \notin R(v) ; \\ f(g(x)), & x \in R(v) .\end{cases}
$$

It is easy to show that $h$ is a surjective p-morphism from $\mathfrak{M}$ onto $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$. Then by Remark 6.2.3, $h^{-1}$ is a surjective subsimulation of $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$ in $\mathfrak{M}$, so $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$. On the other hand, $h$ clearly satisfies (S1). For (S2), suppose $x R y$. It is sufficient to show that $h(x) R^{\prime} h(y)$.

Case 1: $y \notin R(v)$. Then $x \notin R(v)$ and by the definitions of $h, h(x)=f(x)$ and $h(y)=f(y)$. Since $f$ is an isomorphism, we have that $f(x) R^{\prime} f(y)$.

Case 2: $x, y \in R(v)$. Then by the definitions of $h, h(x)=f(g(x))$ and $h(y)=f(g(y))$. Since $f \circ g$ is an isomorphism, we have that $f(g(x)) R^{\prime} f(g(y))$.

Case 3: $x \notin R(v)$ and $y \in R(v)$. Then we must have that $x R v$ and $h(x)=f(x)$, so by the definition of $R^{\prime}, f(x) R^{\prime} f(w)$, i.e. $f(x) R^{\prime} f(g(v))$. By the definition of $h, h(y)=f(g(y))$. Since $f \circ g$ is an isomorphism, we have that $f(g(v)) R^{\prime} f(g(y))$, so by transitivity $f(x) R^{\prime} f(g(y))$.

Hence, $h$ is a surjective subsimulation of $\mathfrak{M}$ in $\widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{M} \preceq \widehat{\mathfrak{M}}^{w, v}$.
Now, we describe the construction of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ for each finite rooted generated $n$-submodel $\mathfrak{M}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ with the root $r$ by induction on $n$ precisely.

- For $n=1$, if $\mathfrak{M} \vDash p$, then let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ be the model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{1}$ in Figure 6.5. If $\mathfrak{M} \nLeftarrow p$, then let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ be the model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{2}$ in Figure 6.5. For all other finite rooted 1-models $\mathfrak{M}$, let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ be the model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{0}$ in Figure 6.5.
- For $n>1$, we construct $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ by following the following steps:

Step 1 Let $s=\operatorname{col}(r)$. Construct the model $\mathfrak{N}_{1}=\overline{\mathfrak{M}}^{s}$.

Step 2 Unravel the model $\mathfrak{N}_{1}$ to a tree-like model $\mathfrak{N}_{2}$.
Step 3 For every $w \in S_{r}$ such that $|\operatorname{prop}(w)|=k$ and $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{2}\right)_{w} \not ¥^{n-k} \mathfrak{N}_{0}$ for all representative $k-m$-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$, construct the model $\mathfrak{N}_{3}=$ $\overrightarrow{\mathfrak{N}}_{2}{ }^{w}$ as described in Lemma 6.4.7.

Step 4 For every $w, v \in S_{r}$ such that $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{3}\right)_{v} \preceq\left(\mathfrak{N}_{3}\right)_{w}$, construct the model $\mathfrak{N}_{4}=\widetilde{\mathfrak{N}}_{3}{ }^{w, v}$ as described in Lemma 6.4.8.
Step 5 For every $w, v \in \mathfrak{N}_{4}$ such that $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{4}\right)_{v} \cong\left(\mathfrak{N}_{4}\right)_{w}$, construct the model $\mathfrak{N}_{5}=\widehat{\mathfrak{N}}^{w, v}$ as described in Lemma 6.4.9.

Denote the resulting model by $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$. It is not hard to see by induction that $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ is a finite rooted generated submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)$. So indeed, $\mathfrak{M}_{0} \in[\mathfrak{M}]$ for all $[\mathfrak{M}] \in \operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))$. We will use $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ as representative of the equivalence class $[\mathfrak{M}]$.

Corollary 6.4.10. $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{M}_{0}$.
Proof. By Lemma 6.4.6, 6.4.8 and 6.4.7.
Corollary 6.4.11. Let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ be any representative n-model with the root $r$. For any point $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$, the generated submodel $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ is isomorphic to some representative n-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$ with $\mathfrak{N}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0}$.

Proof. For any point $w$ in $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ with $|\operatorname{prop}(w)|=k$, by the above construction, $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ is $k$-isomorphic to some representative $k$-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{\prime}$. This means that the above 4 steps are not applicable on $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{\prime}$, hence not applicable on $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. So $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ is isomorphic to a representative $n$-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Clearly, we have that $\mathfrak{N}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0}$.

The union of two total subsimulations is again a subsimulation. Thus on a model $\mathfrak{M}$ there exists a maximal subsimulation which is the union of all subsimulations on $\mathfrak{M}$. It is worthwhile to point out that $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ is in fact the image of a maximal subsimulation on $\mathfrak{M}$. For more details on maximal subsimulations, one may refer to [25].

The above construction makes $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ a "smallest" model in the equivalence class $[\mathfrak{M}]$, in the sense that it is irreducible with respect to the steps in the construction. The next lemma shows that such a "smallest" model is unique.

Lemma 6.4.12. For any generated submodels $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)$ with $\mathfrak{M} \equiv$ $\mathfrak{N}$, we have that $\mathfrak{M}_{0} \cong \mathfrak{N}_{0}$.

Proof. We show the lemma by induction on $n$.
$n=1$. All representative 1-models are displayed in Figure 6.5. By the construction, the lemma holds.
$n>1$. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ be two $n$-models with $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N}$. Let $r_{0}$ be the root of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ and $r_{1}$ be the root of $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Clearly

$$
\operatorname{col}\left(r_{0}\right)=\operatorname{col}\left(r_{1}\right) ;
$$

otherwise $\mathfrak{M}_{0} \not \equiv \mathfrak{N}_{0}$.
Consider the sets $S_{r_{0}}$ and $S_{r_{1}}$ of immediate successors of $r_{0}$ and $r_{1}$, respectively. For any $w \in S_{r_{0}}$, according to the construction of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$,

$$
\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w} \cong{ }^{m} \mathfrak{M}_{0}^{\prime}
$$

where $\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{\prime}$ is some representative $m$-model and $m=|\operatorname{prop}(w)|<n$.
Assume for any $v \in S_{r_{1}}$ such that $\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w),\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}$ is not $m$ isomorphic to $\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{\prime}$. Since $m<n$, by the induction hypothesis we know that

$$
\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w} \not \equiv^{m}\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v} .
$$

Thus for any $v \in S_{r_{1}}$ such that $\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w)$, we have $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w} \not \equiv\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}$. Without loss of generality, we may assume that $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w} \npreceq\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}$.

Now suppose $Z: \mathfrak{M}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Then there exists a total subsimulation $Z^{\prime} \subseteq Z \upharpoonright\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ of $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ in $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}$ for some $v \in S_{r_{1}}$, which leads to a contradiction.

Thus we conclude that there exists some $v \in S_{r_{1}}$ with $\operatorname{col}(v)=\operatorname{col}(w)$ such that

$$
\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v} \cong{ }^{m} \mathfrak{M}_{0}^{\prime} \cong{ }^{m}\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}
$$

Then since $\operatorname{prop}(v)=\operatorname{prop}(w)$, we have that $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v} \cong\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. From the construction of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$, we know that distinct points in $S_{r_{0}}$ generates non-isomorphic submodels. This also holds for $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Since $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ are generated submodels of $\mathcal{U}(n), S_{r_{0}}$ and $S_{r_{1}}$ are finite. Thus, we conclude that $\left|S_{r_{0}}\right| \leq\left|S_{r_{1}}\right|$.

By a similar argument, we can show that for any $v \in S_{r_{1}}$, there exists some $w \in S_{r_{0}}$ with $\operatorname{col}(w)=\operatorname{col}(v)$ such that $\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v} \cong\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. And $\left|S_{r_{1}}\right| \leq\left|S_{r_{0}}\right|$. Thus, we have that $\left|S_{r_{0}}\right|=\left|S_{r_{1}}\right|$ and so $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{S_{r_{0}}} \cong\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{S_{r_{1}}}$. Furthermore, since $\operatorname{col}\left(r_{0}\right)=\operatorname{col}\left(r_{1}\right)$, we finally obtain $\mathfrak{M}_{0} \cong \mathfrak{N}_{0}$.

## $6.5 n$-universal models of $N N I L(\vec{p})$-formulas

In this section, we define a model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ acting as an universal model for $N N I L(\vec{p})$-formulas. Each NNIL-formula defines a unique upset in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. We have proved in Section 6.1 that the set $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p}) \equiv$ is finite, from which we know that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is finite.

Definition 6.5.1. Define a model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ by taking

- $W=\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}$;
- $[\mathfrak{M}] R[\mathfrak{N}]$ iff $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}^{\prime}$ for some $\mathfrak{M}^{\prime} \in[\mathfrak{M}]$ and $\mathfrak{N}^{\prime} \in[\mathfrak{N}]$;
- $\operatorname{col}([\mathfrak{M}])=\operatorname{col}\left(t_{0}\right)$, where $t_{0}$ is the root of the representative model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ of $[\mathfrak{M}] . V=V_{\text {col }}$.

Remark 6.5.2. The $R$ in Definition 6.5 .1 is really a partial order.
Proof. Clearly, $R$ is reflexive. For transitivity, suppose $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right]$ and $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{3}\right]$. Then there exists $\mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \in\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right], \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime} \in\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right]$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{3}^{\prime} \in\left[\mathfrak{M}_{3}\right]$ such that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \text { and } \mathfrak{M}_{3}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime}
$$

Since

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime}
$$

by the transitivity of $\preceq, \mathfrak{M}_{3}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime}$, which means that $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{3}\right]$.
For anti-symmetry, suppose $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right]$ and $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right]$. Then there exists $\mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime \prime} \in\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right]$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime}, \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime} \in\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right]$ such that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \text { and } \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime \prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime}
$$

Note that we also have that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime \prime} \text { and } \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime \prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime} .
$$

Thus by the transitivity of $\preceq, \mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime}$ and so $\mathfrak{M}_{1}^{\prime} \equiv \mathfrak{M}_{2}^{\prime}$, which means that $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{1}\right]=\left[\mathfrak{M}_{2}\right]$.

Remark 6.5.3. $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is rooted.
Proof. It follows from Theorem 6.4.2 that the model $\mathfrak{U}^{n}$ subsimulates all finite rooted generated submodels of $\mathcal{U}(n)$. Thus, $\left[\mathfrak{U}^{n}\right] R[\mathfrak{M}]$ for all $[\mathfrak{M}] \in$ $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}$. So $\left[\mathfrak{U}^{n}\right]$ is the root of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$.

Figure 6.6: $\mathcal{U}(1)^{N N I L}$


Figure 6.7: $\mathcal{U}(1)^{N N I L}$


We will prove soon that each rooted upset in $\mathcal{U}^{\sharp}(n)$ is defined by a $D P$ NNIL ( $\vec{p}$ )-formula.

Definition 6.5.4. A formula $\varphi$ is called $a$ formula with the disjunction property (a DP-formula for short) iff for all formulas $\psi, \chi \in \mathrm{FORM}$, the following holds:

$$
\vdash \varphi \rightarrow \psi \vee \chi \Rightarrow \vdash \varphi \rightarrow \psi \text { or } \vdash \varphi \rightarrow \chi
$$

For more details on $D P$-formulas, one may refer to [4].
The model $\mathcal{U}(1)^{N N I L}$ of $N N I L(p)$-formulas is shown in Figure 6.6 (see also Figure 6.7). The representative models for all equivalence classes of models of the points in $\mathcal{U}(1)^{N N I L}$ have been added in Figure 6.7. The $D P-N N I L(p)-$ formulas are (the number before a formula stands for the number of the root in Figure 6.6 of the upset defined by the formula):

$$
\text { 1.p } \quad 2 . \neg p \quad 3 . p \rightarrow p
$$

The model $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ of $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formulas is shown in Figure 6.8 (see also Figure 6.9). The representative models for all equivalence classes of

Figure 6.8: $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$

models of the points in $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ have been added in Figure 6.9. The $D P-$ $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formulas are (the number before a formula stands for the number of the root in Figure 6.8 of the upset defined by the formula):

| 1. $p \wedge \neg q$ | 2. $p \wedge q$ |
| :--- | :--- |
| 3. $\neg p \wedge \neg q$ | 4. $\neg p \wedge q$ |
| 5. $p$ | 6. $\neg q$ |
| 7. $(p \rightarrow q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p)$ | 8. $\neg p$ |
| 9. $q$ | 10. $(q \rightarrow p) \wedge(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)$ |
| 11. $\neg(p \wedge q)$ | 12. $(p \rightarrow q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)$ |
| 13. $q \rightarrow p$ | 14. $(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)$ |
| 15. $p \rightarrow q$ | 16. $q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p$ |
| $17 . p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q$ | 18. $p \rightarrow p$ |

We now prove that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is finite.
Theorem 6.5.5. For every $n \in \omega, \operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}$ is finite.

Figure 6.9: $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$


Proof. It suffices to show that for each $n \in \omega$, there are only finitely many rooted representative $n$-models $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ for equivalence classes in $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n))_{\equiv}$. We show this by induction on $n$.
$n=1$. It is easy to see that there are only 3 rooted representative 1 models (see Figure 6.7).

Suppose the theorem hold for all $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n)) \equiv$ with $n<k$. Now consider $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(k))_{\equiv}$. For any $[\mathfrak{M}]$ in $\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(k))_{\equiv}$, by the construction we know that the representative $k$-model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ is rooted with the root $r$ and $\operatorname{col}(r)=s$. We know that there are only $2^{k}$ many $k$-colors. Thus, all $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ have only $2^{k}$ many different colors for the roots.

By the construction, we also know that for every $w \in S_{r}$ with $|\operatorname{prop}(w)|=$ $m,\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ is $k-m$-isomorphic to a representative $k-m$-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}$. Put $t=\operatorname{col}(w)$. By the induction hypothesis, there are only finitely many representative $k-m$-models, say $l_{t}$ many.

Note that the set $C_{s}$ of $n$-colors that are greater than $s$ is finite. Now, fix a color $s$ of the root of a representative $k$-model, the number of different $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ 's is equal to

$$
\alpha_{s}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} C_{m}^{i}+1,
$$

where

$$
m=\sum_{t \in C_{s}} l_{t} .
$$

Hence, the number of all representative $k$-model is

$$
\sum_{s \in \mathbf{C}^{k}} \alpha_{s},
$$

which is finite.

Corollary 6.5.6. For every $n \in \omega, \mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is finite.
For every point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, the representative $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ of $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ is generally not isomorphic to the submodel of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ generated by the point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. However, $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ is $\equiv$-equivalent to $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}$.
Lemma 6.5.7. For every $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] \in \mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be the representative model with the root $r$ in $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. Let $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{\text {NNIL }}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}=$ $\langle W, R, V\rangle$. Then $\mathfrak{M}_{0} \equiv\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}$.

Proof. We show by induction on $d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$ that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\exists Z \text { s.t. } Z:\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0} \text { and } Z \text { is root-preserving; }  \tag{6.7}\\
\exists Z \text { s.t. } Z: \mathfrak{M}_{0} \preceq\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] .} \tag{6.8}
\end{gather*}
$$

$d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)=1$. Then both $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}$ and $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ are singletons and clearly (6.7) and (6.8) hold.
$d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)>1$. We first show (6.7). For any proper successor $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right](1 \leq i \leq$ $k$ ) of $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$, by the construction of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, we know that there exists $Z_{0}^{i}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{0}^{i}: \mathfrak{N}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0} . \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $d\left(\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right]\right)<d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$, by the induction hypothesis of (6.7) we have that there exists a surjective $Z_{1}^{i}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{1}^{i}:\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right]} \preceq \mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i} . \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 6.4.3,

$$
Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}:\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{P}_{0}^{i}\right]} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0} .
$$

Define a relation $Z$ on $W \times W^{\prime}$ by

$$
Z=\left\{\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right], r\right)\right\} \cup \bigcup_{1 \leq i \leq k} Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}
$$

Clearly, $Z$ is total and root-preserving. We show that $Z$ is a subsimulation. For $(\mathrm{S} 1)$, by the construction of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}, \operatorname{col}\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)=\operatorname{col}(r)$. For all $1 \leq$ $i \leq k$ and all $\left(w, w^{\prime}\right) \in Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}$, since $Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}$ is a subsimulation, $\operatorname{col}(w)=$ $\operatorname{col}\left(w^{\prime}\right)$.

For (S2), suppose $w Z w^{\prime}$ and $w R v$. There are two cases.
Case 1: $w=\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. Then $w^{\prime}=r$. If $v=w$, then clearly $w^{\prime} R^{\prime} w^{\prime}$ and $v Z w^{\prime}$. Now suppose $v \neq w$. Then $v=\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right]$ for some $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] \in R\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$. By the definition of $R$, we have that there exists a total subsimulation $Z_{0}$ satisfying (6.9), and so

$$
r^{\prime} Z_{0} v^{\prime} \text { for some } v^{\prime} \in R^{\prime}(r)
$$

where $r^{\prime}$ is the root of $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$. Since $d\left(\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right]\right)<d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$, by the induction hypothesis of (6.7), there exists a root-preserving $Z_{1}$ satisfying (6.10). Clearly,

$$
\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] Z_{1} r^{\prime}
$$

Thus, $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] Z_{0} \circ Z_{1} v^{\prime}$, which means that $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] Z v^{\prime}$ and so (S2) is obtained.
Case 2: $w=\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right]$ for some $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right] \in R\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$ with $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{i}\right] \neq\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. Then we have that $\left(w, w^{\prime}\right) \in Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}$, so since $Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i}$ is a subsimulation, there exists $v^{\prime} \in R^{\prime}\left(w^{\prime}\right)$ such that $v Z_{0}^{i} \circ Z_{1}^{i} v^{\prime}$, i.e. $v Z v^{\prime}$.

Next, we show (6.8). For any point $w^{\prime}$ in $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ with $w \neq r$, by Lemma 6.4.11, $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}}$ is isomorphic to a proper successor of $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. Since $d\left(\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}}\right]\right)<$ $d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$, by the induction hypothesis of (6.8), there exists a total subsimulation $Z^{w^{\prime}}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z^{w}:\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}} \preceq\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}}\right]} . \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define a relation $Z^{\prime}$ on $W^{\prime} \times W$ by

$$
Z^{\prime}=\left\{\left(r,\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)\right\} \cup \bigcup_{w^{\prime} \in R^{\prime}(r)} Z^{w^{\prime}}
$$

Clearly, $Z^{\prime}$ is total. We show that $Z^{\prime}$ is a subsimulation. For $(\mathrm{S} 1)$, by the construction of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}, \operatorname{col}(r)=\operatorname{col}\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$. For all $w^{\prime} \in R^{\prime}(r)$ and all $\left(w^{\prime}, w\right) \in Z^{w^{\prime}}$, since $Z^{w^{\prime}}$ is a subsimulation, $\operatorname{col}\left(w^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{col}(w)$.

For (S2), suppose $w^{\prime} Z^{\prime} w$ and $w^{\prime} R^{\prime} v^{\prime}$. We distinguish two cases.
Case 1: $w^{\prime}=r$. Then $w=\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$. If $v^{\prime}=w^{\prime}$, then clearly, $w R w$ and $v^{\prime} Z w$. Now suppose $v^{\prime} \neq w^{\prime}$. Then since $d\left(\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{v^{\prime}}\right]\right)<d\left(\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]\right)$, by the induction hypothesis of (6.8), there exists a total subsimulation $Z^{v^{\prime}}$ satisfying (6.11). Thus, there exists $v \in\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{\left.v^{\prime}\right]}\right]}$ such that $v^{\prime} Z^{v^{\prime}} v$. Clearly, $w R v$.

Case 2: $w^{\prime} \neq r$. Then $\left(w^{\prime}, w\right) \in Z^{w^{\prime}}$ and $w \in\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}}\right]}=$ $\left\langle W^{\prime \prime}, R \upharpoonright W^{\prime \prime}, V^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$. Since $Z^{w^{\prime}}:\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}} \preceq\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w^{\prime}}\right]}$, there exists $v \in R \upharpoonright W^{\prime \prime}(w) \subseteq R(w)$ such that $v^{\prime} Z v$.

The next theorem shows that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is a universal model for $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$ formulas.

Theorem 6.5.8. For every formula $\varphi \in \operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$, we have that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L} \models$ $\varphi$ iff $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$.
Proof. " $\Leftarrow$ " holds trivially. Suppose $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L} \models \varphi$. Then $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathbb{L}^{n}\right]} \models$ $\varphi$. By Lemma 6.5.7, we know that $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{U}^{n}\right]} \equiv \mathfrak{U}^{n}$. Note that $\mathfrak{U}^{n} \equiv$ $\mathcal{U}(n)$. So $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathbb{N}^{n}\right]} \equiv \mathcal{U}(n)$. By Lemma 6.4.5, we obtain that $\mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi$. Then, by Theorem 3.2.4, $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi$.
Corollary 6.5.9. There are only finitely many provably non-equivalent formulas in $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$.

Proof. By a same argument as the proof of Theorem 5.1.6.
Next, we show that $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas define upsets in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. We are going to define formulas $\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ for all points $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. $\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ will share the same property as $\varphi_{w}$ and $\varphi_{w}^{*}$ in Chapter 3 and Chapter 5.

Consider the representative $n$-model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ with the root $r$ of a point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. Let $w$ be a point in $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$ with $\mathfrak{M}_{0}, w=p_{i_{0}}\left(1 \leq i_{0} \leq n\right)$. By the construction of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$, we know that there exists a representative $n-1$-model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}$ such that $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w} \cong{ }^{n-1}\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$.

For any point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] \in \mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$ and $r$ be the root of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$. Now we define a formula $\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$.

Definition 6.5.10. We define $\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ for $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ by induction on $n$.
$n=1$. Then $\mathcal{U}(1)^{N N I L}$ consists of three points $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{0}\right],\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{1}\right],\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{2}\right]$ (see Figure 6.5 and also Figure 6.7). Define

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{0}\right]}^{\sharp}=p \rightarrow p, \\
\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{1}\right]}^{\sharp}=p, \\
\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}^{2}\right]}^{\sharp}=\neg p .
\end{gathered}
$$

$n>1$. First, put

$$
Q=\operatorname{prop}(r) \cup \bigcap_{w \in W} \operatorname{notprop}(w)
$$

For each propositional letter $p$, let $X_{p}=V(p) \cap R(r)$. For each $w \in X_{p}$, let $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}$ be the representative $n-1$-model such that $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w} \cong{ }^{n-1}\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. Define

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}= & \bigwedge p r o p(r) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{\neg q: q \in \bigcap_{w \in W} \operatorname{notprop}(w)\right\} \\
& \wedge \bigwedge\left\{p \rightarrow \bigvee_{w \in X_{p}} \varphi_{\left[\Im_{0}^{w}\right]}: p \notin Q\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that in the above definition, $p \notin P V\left(\varphi_{\left[\Re_{0}^{w}\right]}\right)$.
Here for the following proofs, we do not need to define $\psi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ formulas which satisfy $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] \not \vDash \psi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ iff $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ for each point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$. However, $\psi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ formulas may have a close connection with the $\beta(w)$ formulas defined in Section 4.2 and this gives a topic for future work.

Theorem 6.5.11. For each point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$, we have that $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$ iff $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right]$.
Proof. Let $\mathfrak{M}_{0}=\left\langle W^{\prime}, R^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{N}_{0}=\left\langle W^{\prime \prime}, R^{\prime \prime}, V^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$. Let $r$ be the root of $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$. We show the theorem by induction on $n$.
$n=1$. Clearly the theorem holds.
$n>1$. For " $\Leftarrow$ ", it suffices to show that $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L},\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$. By Lemma 6.5.7, it then suffices to show that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, r \vDash \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp} .
$$

Clearly,

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, r \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(r) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{\neg q: q \in \bigcap_{w \in W^{\prime}} \operatorname{notprop}(w)\right\}
$$

For any $p \notin Q$, suppose $\mathfrak{M}_{0}, w \models p$ for some $w \in R(r)$. We know that there exists an representative $n$ - 1 -model $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}$ such that $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w} \cong{ }^{n-1}\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. By the induction hypothesis we have that

$$
\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]}
$$

which implies that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, w \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]} .
$$

So for each such $w$,

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, w \models \bigvee_{v \in X_{p}} \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{v}\right]}
$$

Thus

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, r \models p \rightarrow \bigvee_{w \in X_{p}} \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]},
$$

and $\mathfrak{M}_{0}, r \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$.
For " $\Leftarrow$ ", suppose $\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right] \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$. We show $\mathfrak{N}_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{M}_{0}$, i.e. $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right] R\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right]$. By the definition, $\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right]} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$. Thus by Lemma 6.5.7 and Theorem 6.4 .5 we have that

$$
\mathfrak{N}_{0} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp} .
$$

For any $p \notin Q$ and any point $v \in \mathfrak{N}_{0}$ such that $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, v \models p$, we have that $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, v \models \bigvee_{w \in X_{p}} \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{u}\right]}$, thus there exists $w \in X_{p}$ such that

$$
\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]} .
$$

There exists an $n-1$-model $\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0}$ such that $\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0} \cong{ }^{n-1}\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}$. Clearly

$$
\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]} .
$$

By Lemma 6.5.7 and Theorem 6.4.5,

$$
\left(\mathcal{U}(n-1)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0}\right]} \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}\right]} .
$$

Then since both $\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0}$ and $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}$ are $n-1$-models, by the induction hypothesis we have that there exists a total subsimulation $Z^{v}$ such that

$$
Z^{v}:\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0} \preceq \mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w}
$$

Note that there exist frame isomorphisms $f: \mathfrak{N}_{0} \rightarrow\left(\left(\mathfrak{N}_{0}\right)_{v}\right)_{0}$ and $g$ : $\mathfrak{N}_{0}^{w} \rightarrow\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$. Consider the relation $Z_{0}^{v}$ between $\mathfrak{N}_{0}$ and $\left(\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right)_{w}$ defined by

$$
Z_{0}^{v}=\left\{(x, y):(f(x), g(y)) \in Z^{v}\right\}
$$

Note that $x \models p$ and $y \models p$. It is then easy to see that $Z_{0}^{v}$ is a total subsimulation.

Define a relation on $W^{\prime \prime} \times W^{\prime}$ by

$$
Z=\left\{(u, r): \mathfrak{N}_{0}, u \not \vDash p \text { for all } p \notin Q\right\} \cup \bigcup_{\mathfrak{N}_{0}, v \vDash p \text { for some } p \notin Q} Z_{0}^{v} .
$$

Clearly, $Z$ is total. We show that $Z$ is a subsimulation.
For (S1), clearly, for any $(x, y) \in Z_{0}^{v}$ for some $v$ satisfying $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, v \models p$ for some $p \notin Q$, since $Z_{0}^{v}$ is a subsimulation $\operatorname{col}(x)=\operatorname{col}(y)$. For $(u, r) \in Z$ with $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, u \not \models p$ for all $p \notin Q$, we know that

$$
\mathfrak{M}_{0}, r \not \vDash p \text { for all } p \notin Q
$$

By $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, u \models \varphi_{\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]}^{\sharp}$, we know that

$$
\mathfrak{N}_{0}, u \models \bigwedge \operatorname{prop}(r) \wedge \bigwedge\left\{\neg q: q \in \bigcap_{w \in W} \operatorname{notprop}(w)\right\}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{prop}(u) \supseteq \operatorname{prop}(r), \\
& \operatorname{notprop}(u) \supseteq \bigcap_{w \in W} \operatorname{notprop}(w) \cup\left(\left\{p_{1}, \cdots, p_{n}\right\} \backslash Q\right)=\operatorname{notprop}(r) \text {. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\operatorname{col}(u)=\operatorname{col}(r)$.
For (S2), suppose $x Z x^{\prime}$ and $x R^{\prime \prime} y$. We distinguish three cases.
Case 1: $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, x \models p$ for some $p \notin Q$. Then $\left(x, x^{\prime}\right) \in Z_{0}^{x}$. So since $Z_{0}^{x}$ is a subsimulation, there exists $y^{\prime} \in R^{\prime \prime}\left(x^{\prime}\right)$ such that $y Z_{0}^{x} y^{\prime}$, i.e. $y Z y^{\prime}$.

Case 2: $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, x \not \models p$ and $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, y \notin p$ for all $p \notin Q$. Then by the definition of $Z$, we must have that $x^{\prime}=r$. Clearly, $y Z r$ and $r R^{\prime \prime} r$.

Case 3: $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, x \not \models p$ for all $p \notin Q$ and $\mathfrak{N}_{0}, y \models p$ for some $p \notin Q$. We have that $y \in \operatorname{dom}\left(Z_{0}^{y}\right)$, so since $Z_{0}^{y}$ is total, there exists $y^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$ such that $y Z_{0}^{y} y^{\prime}$, i.e. $y Z y^{\prime}$. And clearly, $r R^{\prime \prime} y^{\prime}$.

For each upset $X$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$, we define a formula $\theta^{n}(X) \in N N I L(\vec{p})$ as

$$
\theta^{n}(X):=\bigvee_{w \in X} \varphi_{w}^{\sharp} .
$$

In case that $X=\{w\}$, we will only write $\theta^{n}(w)$ instead of $\theta^{n}(\{w\})$.
Lemma 6.5.12. For every upset $X$ of $\mathcal{U}(n)^{\text {NNIL }}$, we have that $X=V\left(\theta^{n}(X)\right)$.
Proof. By Theorem 6.5.11.
We end this section by giving a characterization property for NNILformulas.

Theorem 6.5.13. Let $\varphi$ be a formula. If $\varphi$ satisfies that for any finite models $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ with $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N}$,

$$
\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi \Leftrightarrow \mathfrak{N} \models \varphi
$$

then $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$.
Proof. Consider the model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}=\langle W, R, V\rangle$. Let $\varphi^{\prime}=\theta^{n}(V(\varphi))$.
For every point $w \in \mathcal{U}(n)$, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{U}(n), w \models \varphi & \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi \\
& \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathcal{U}(n)_{w}\right]} \models \varphi \text { (by Theorem } 6.5 .7 \text { and the property } \\
& \text { of } \varphi) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow\left(\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}\right)_{\left[\mathcal{U}(n)_{w]}\right]} \models \varphi^{\prime} \text { (by the definition of } \varphi^{\prime} \text { ) } \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n)_{w} \models \varphi^{\prime}(\text { by Theorem } 6.5 .7 \text { and Theorem } 6.4 .5) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow \mathcal{U}(n), w \models \varphi^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus $\mathcal{U}(n) \models \varphi \leftrightarrow \varphi^{\prime}$, so by Theorem 3.2.4, $\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi \leftrightarrow \varphi^{\prime}$.

The next theorem was proved in Theorem 7.4.1 in [25]. We now show it as a corollary of Theorem 6.5.13.

Theorem 6.5.14. Let $\varphi$ be a formula. If $\varphi$ satisfies that for any finite models $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ with $\mathfrak{N} \preceq \mathfrak{M}$,

$$
\mathfrak{M} \models \varphi \Rightarrow \mathfrak{N} \models \varphi
$$

then $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$.
Proof. Let $\mathfrak{M}$ and $\mathfrak{N}$ be finite models with $\mathfrak{M} \equiv \mathfrak{N}$. Then it follows from the assumption that

$$
\mathfrak{M} \equiv \varphi \Leftrightarrow \mathfrak{N} \models \varphi
$$

Thus, by Theorem 6.5.13, $\varphi$ is provably equivalent to a formula $\varphi^{\prime} \in N N I L(\vec{p})$.

## 6.6 $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ and the subframe logics axiomatized by $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formulas

The model $\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}$ is special not only in the sense that it is a universal model for $\operatorname{NNIL}(\vec{p})$-formulas, but also in the sense that it suggests a method for future work on subframe logics. In this section, we exemplify this by obtaining the subframe logics defined by $N N I L(p, q)$-formulas by observing the structure of $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$. It will turn out that NNIL-formulas are much more efficient than $[\wedge, \rightarrow]$-formulas. We will find 8 subframe logics axiomatized by $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formulas, whereas $[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{2}$-formulas only axiomatize classical logic (by a Peirce formula).

We have seen in the previous section that each point $\left[\mathfrak{M}_{0}\right]$ in $\mathcal{U}(2)^{\text {NNIL }}$ corresponds to (is) a representative model $\mathfrak{M}_{0}$. There are 7 different underlying frames of these representative models (see Figure 6.10). On the other hand, each upset $X$ of $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ corresponds to a $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula $\theta^{2}(X)$. $\theta^{2}(X)$ refutes all the underlying frames of the representative models corresponding to the points of $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ that are not in $X$. This gives us some idea of axiomatizing subframe logics by two-variable NNIL-formulas by some observation of the model $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$.

To be precise, consider the upset $X_{1}$ generated by the points numbered $1,2,3,4$ in the model $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$. The underlying frames of the representative

Figure 6.10: Underlying frames of the representative models in $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$
$\mathfrak{F}_{1}$
-
$\mathfrak{F}_{2}$

models of these four points are the same, namely the frame $\mathfrak{F}_{1}$ in Figure 6.10. The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the set $X_{1}$ is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{1}\right)=(p \wedge \neg q) \vee(p \wedge q) \vee(\neg p \wedge \neg q) \vee(\neg p \wedge q)
$$

Consider the logic

$$
L_{1}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{1}\right) .
$$

Observe that the axiom $\theta^{2}\left(X_{1}\right)$ can be simplified to

$$
p \vee \neg p
$$

and $L_{1}$ is the classical propositional logic CPC. CPC characterizes the frames consisting of a single reflexive element which are exactly the $\mathfrak{F}_{1}$-like frames.

Consider the upset $X_{2}$ generated by the points numbered $5,6,7,8,9$. The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the set $X_{2}$ is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{2}\right)=p \vee \neg q \vee(p \leftrightarrow q) \vee \neg p \vee q .
$$

The logic

$$
L_{2}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{2}\right)
$$

is the 3-valued Gödel logic $\mathbf{G} 3$ (also called here-and-there logic in [10]). The frames of here-and-there logic have depth less or equal to 2 and width 1 . These frames are exactly those appearing in the corresponding set of frames
of the set $X_{2}$, namely the $\mathfrak{F}_{1}$-like or $\mathfrak{F}_{2}$-like frames (see Figure 6.10). It is worthwhile to point out that in [10], many known axiomatizations of the here-and-there logic are given, however, the axiom $p \vee \neg q \vee(p \leftrightarrow q) \vee \neg p \vee q$ is not among those. As far as the author knows, this is a new axiomatization for the here-and-there logic.

The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{3}$ generated by the points numbered $5,9,10,11,12$ is
$\theta^{2}\left(X_{3}\right)=p \vee q \vee((q \rightarrow p) \wedge(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)) \vee \neg(p \wedge q) \vee((p \rightarrow q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p))$.
The underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{3}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}, \mathfrak{F}_{2}$ and $\mathfrak{F}_{3}$ in Figure 6.10. The logic

$$
L_{3}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{3}\right)
$$

defines the frames with depth less than or equal to 2 and width less than or equal to 2 .

The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{4}$ generated by the points numbered $5,9,14$ is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{4}\right)=p \vee q \vee((p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p))
$$

The underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{4}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}-\mathfrak{F}_{3}$ and $\mathfrak{F}_{5}$ in Figure 6.10. The axiom $\theta^{2}\left(X_{4}\right)$ can be simplified to

$$
p \vee(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)
$$

The logic

$$
L_{4}=\mathbf{I P C}+p \vee(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)
$$

is the 3-Peirce logic and defines the frames with depth less than or equal to 2. 3-Peirce logic is commonly axiomatized by

$$
((p \rightarrow(((q \rightarrow r) \rightarrow r) \rightarrow r)) \rightarrow p) \rightarrow p
$$

As far as the author knows, the axiom $p \vee(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)$ is a new one. Moreover, this result can easily be generalized to the $n$-Peirce logic axiomatizing the frames of depth less or equal to $n$.

The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{5}$ generated by the points numbered 13,15 is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{5}\right)=(p \rightarrow q) \vee(q \rightarrow p)
$$

Figure 6.11: The frame for $L_{6}$


The logic

$$
L_{5}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{5}\right)
$$

is the Dummett's logic LC and defines the linear frames (frames with width 1). Note that the underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{5}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}-\mathfrak{F}_{4}$ in Figure 6.10. However, there exists a model on $\mathfrak{F}_{3}$ falsifying $\theta^{2}\left(X_{5}\right)$, namely the representative model of the point numbered 11. This means that $\mathfrak{F}_{3}$ is not an $L_{5}$ frame. The remaining frames $\mathfrak{F}_{1}, \mathfrak{F}_{2}$ and $\mathfrak{F}_{4}$ are exactly the linear frames among the all 7 frames in Figure 6.10.

The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{6}$ generated by the points numbered $11,13,15$ is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{6}\right)=\neg(p \wedge q) \vee(p \rightarrow q) \vee(q \rightarrow p) .
$$

The underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{6}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}-\mathfrak{F}_{4}$. The logic

$$
L_{6}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{6}\right)
$$

defines the frames with 2-split only right at the end of the frames (see Figure 6.11).

The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{7}$ generated by the points numbered $13,14,15$ is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{7}\right)=(q \rightarrow p) \vee((p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)) \vee(p \rightarrow q) .
$$

The underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{7}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}-\mathfrak{F}_{5}$. The logic

$$
L_{7}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{7}\right)
$$

defines the frames with any splits only right at the end of the frames (see Figure 6.12).

Figure 6.12: The frame for $L_{7}$


Figure 6.13: The frame for $L_{8}$


The $\operatorname{NNIL}(p, q)$-formula defining the upset $X_{8}$ generated by the points numbered 16,17 is

$$
\theta^{2}\left(X_{8}\right)=(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \vee(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p) .
$$

The underlying frames of the representative models of $X_{8}$ are $\mathfrak{F}_{1}-\mathfrak{F}_{6}$. The logic

$$
L_{8}=\mathbf{I P C}+\theta^{2}\left(X_{8}\right)
$$

defines the frames with any splits only right at the end except that one branch may continue linearly (see Figure 6.13).

All the above logics, their properties and connections with $\mathcal{U}(2)^{N N I L}$ are listed in Table 6.1.
Table 6.1: Subframe logics axiomatized by $N N I L(p, q)$-formulas

| Name (if available) | Points | Axiomatization | Frame characterization properties |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Classical logic | 1,2,3,4 | $p \vee \neg p$ | reflexive singleton |
| Here and there logic | 5,6,7,8,9 | $p \vee \neg q \vee(p \leftrightarrow q) \vee \neg p \vee q$ | depth 2 width 1 |
| - | 5,9,10,11,12 | $\begin{gathered} p \vee q \vee((q \rightarrow p) \wedge(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)) \vee \\ \neg(p \wedge q) \vee((p \rightarrow q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)) \end{gathered}$ | depth 2 width 2 |
| 3-Peirce logic | 5,9,14 | $p \vee(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q)$ | depth 2 |
| Dummett's logic | 13,15 | $(p \rightarrow q) \vee(q \rightarrow p)$ | width 1 (linear) |
| - | 11,13,15 | $\neg(p \wedge q) \vee(p \rightarrow q) \vee(q \rightarrow p)$ | 2 -split only at the end |
| - | 13,14,15 | $(q \rightarrow p) \vee((p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \wedge(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)) \vee(p \rightarrow q)$ | any splits only at the end |
| - | 16,17 | $(p \rightarrow q \vee \neg q) \vee(q \rightarrow p \vee \neg p)$ | any splits only at the end except that one branch may continue linearly |

## Bibliography

[1] Balbes, R., and Dwinger, P. Distributive Lattices. University of Missouri Press, 1975.
[2] Bezhanishvili, G., and Ghilardi, S. An algebraic approach to subframe logics. intuitionistic case. Annals of Pure and Applied Logic 147 (2007), 84-100.
[3] Bezhanishvili, N. Lattices of Intermediate and Cylindric Modal Logics. PhD thesis, University of Amsterdam, Netherlands, 2006.
[4] Bezhanishvili, N., and de Jongh, D. Projective formulas in two variables in intuitionistic propositional logic, 2008.
[5] Burris, S., and Sankappanavar, H. A Course in Universal Algebra. Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, 1981.
[6] Chagrov, A., and Zakharyaschev, M. Modal Logic. Oxford University Press, 1997.
[7] de Bruijn, N. Exact finite models for minimal propositional calculus over a finite alphabet. Tech. Rep. Report 75-WSK-02, Technological University Eindhoven, 1975.
[8] de Jongh, D. Investigations on the Intuitionistic Propositional Calculus. PhD thesis, University of Wisconsin, 1968.
[9] DE Jongh, D. A characterization of the intuitionistic propositional calculus. In Intuitionism in Proof Theory, M. Kino, Ed. North-Holland, 1970, pp. 211-217.
[10] De Jongh, D., and Hendriks, L. Characterization of strongly equivalent logic programs in intermediate logics. Theory and Practice of Logic Programming 3, 3 (May 2003), 259-270.
[11] de Jongh, D., Hendriks, L., and de Lavalette, G. Computations in fragments of intuitionistic propositional logic. Journal of Automated Reasoning 7, 4 (December 1991), 537-561.
[12] Diego, A. Sur les algébres de Hilbert. Gauthier-Villars (1966), 50.
[13] Esakia, L. Topological Kripke models. Soviet Math. Dokl. 15 (1974), 147-151.
[14] Fine, K. Logics containing K4. part II. Journal of Sybolic Logic 50, 3 (1985), 619-651.
[15] Fitting, M. Intuitionsitic Logic, Model Theory and Forcing. NorthHolland Pub. Co., 1969.
[16] Hendriks, L. Computations in Propositional Logic. PhD thesis, University of Amsterdam, Netherlands, 1996.
[17] Hodges, W. A Shorter Model Theory. Cambridge University Press, 1997.
[18] Jankov, V. The relationship between deducibility in the intuitionistic propositional calculus and finite implicational structures. Soviet Mathematics Doklady (1963).
[19] Jankov, V. A. Ob ischislenii slabogo zakona iskluchennogo tret'jego. Izvestija AN. SSSR, ser. matem. 32, 5 (1968), 1044-1051.
[20] Köhler, P. Brouwerian semilattices. Transactions of the American Mathematical Society 268 (1981), 103-126.
[21] Mints, G. A Short Introduction to Intuitionistic Logic. Springer, 2000.
[22] Monteiro, A. Axiomes independants pour les algebres de lukasiewicz trivalentes. Revista de la Union Matematica Argentina (1955), 149-160.
[23] Nemitz, W. Implicative semi-lattices. Transactions of the American Mathematical Society 117 (1965), 128-142.
[24] Rasiowa, H. An Algebraic Approach to Non-classical Logics. NorthHolland Publishing, 1974.
[25] Visser, A., de Jongh, D., van Benthem, J., and Renardel de Lavalette, G. NNIL, a study in intuiionistic propositional logic. In Modal Logics and Process Algebra: a bisimulation perspective (1995), A. Ponse, M. de Rijke, and Y. Venema, Eds., pp. 289-326.
[26] Yang, F. On HS=SH and Duality Theorems of Intuitionistic Descriptive Frames. ILLC Technical Notes (X), Series X-2007-03.
[27] Zakharyaschev, M. On intermediate logics. Soviet Mathematics Doklady 27 (1983), 274-277.
[28] Zakharyaschev, M. Normal modal logics containing S4. Soviet Mathematics Doklady 29 (1984), 252-255.
[29] Zakharyaschev, M. Syntax and semantics of superintutionistic logics. Algebra and Logic 28, 4 (July 1989), 262-282.
[30] Zakharyaschev, M. Canonical formulas for K4. part II: Cofinal subframe logics. Journal of Symbolic Logic 61 (1996), 421-449.

## Index

$D P$-formula, 86
$R(w), 7$
$R^{+}, 21$
$R^{-1}(w), 7$
$S_{w}, 7$
Th(Г), 7
$U p(\mathfrak{F}), 9$
$\operatorname{Upper}(\mathfrak{M}), 23$
$[\wedge, \rightarrow]$ fragment, 52
$[\wedge, \rightarrow]^{n}$ fragment, 52
$\Delta X, 37$
$\alpha$-reduction, 9
$\beta$-reduction, 10
$\cong 27$
$\cong{ }^{m}, 79$
三, 55, 78
$\equiv^{m}, 79$
BS, 64
CPC, 7
$\mathbf{C}^{n}, 21$
HA, 17
IPC, 6
KC, 36
$\operatorname{Sub}(\mathcal{U}(n)), 78$
$\mathcal{C O}(X), 11$
$\mathcal{H}(n), 8$
$\mathcal{U}(n), 22$
$\mathcal{U}(n)^{-}, 54$
$\mathcal{U}(n)^{*}, 54$
$\mathcal{U}(n)^{N N I L}, 85$
$\mathfrak{M}^{-}, 53$
$\mathfrak{M}_{X}, 9$
$\mathfrak{M}_{w}, 9$
Form, 6
$=, 8$
$\pi_{i}, 21$
〔, 72
$\psi_{w}^{*}, 57$
$\psi_{w}, 26$
$\sigma, 70$
$\varphi(\vec{p}), 6$
$\varphi_{w}^{*}, 57$
$\varphi_{w}, 26$
$\vdash_{\text {IPC }} \varphi, 7$
$c l(w), 56$
$\operatorname{col}(w), 21$
$d(\mathfrak{F}), 7$
$d(w), 7$
$\operatorname{ker}(f), 17$
$m$-isomorphic, 79
newprop(w), 26
notprop( $w$ ), 26
prop(w), 26
$w \downarrow, 7$
$w \prec X, 21$
$w \prec v, 21$
$w \uparrow, 7$
NNIL ${ }_{0}$-formulas, 69
NNIL-formulas, 68
admissible set, 12
anti-chain, 21
border point, 34
Brouwerian semilattice, 64
clopen, 11
color, 20, 21
compactness, 13
congruence extension property, CEP, 17
continuous p-morphism, 16
de Jongh formulas, 26
depth of a frame, 7
depth of a point, 7
descriptive frame, 13
disjoint union, 10, 14, 16
endpoint, 7
finite intersection property, 13
general frame, 12
generated subframe, $9,13,16$
Heyting algebra, 11
immediate successor, 7
implicative semilattice, 64
intersection point, 53
isomorphism, 27
kernel, 17
Kripke frame, 7
Kripke model, 7
Kripke subframe, 9
locally finite, 64
maximal valuation, 53
n-model, 8
n-universal model, 22
NF, 69
p-morphic image, 9
p-morphism, 9, 13
projection, 21
reducible, 9
reduct, 9
reduction, 9,13
refinedness, 13
Rieger-Nishimura ladder, 23
subframe, 47
subframe formulas, 48
subframe logics, 47
subreduction, 47
subsimulation, 72
successor, 7
theorem, 7
theory, 7
topological space, 11
total point, 53
total valuation, 53
totally cover, 21
upset, 9
upward closed subset, 9
variety, 17


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ Note that if $w$ is an endpoint, newprop $(w)=\operatorname{notprop}(w)$.

[^1]:    ${ }^{2}$ Note that in the definition, it does not matter which $q \in \operatorname{notprop}(w)$ is chosen. For simplicity, here we stipulate $q=q_{1}$ to be the one that has the least index.

[^2]:    ${ }^{3}$ We write $\varphi[p / \psi]$ for the formula obtained by substituting all occurrences of $p$ in $\varphi$ by $\psi$.

[^3]:    ${ }^{1}$ In this case, newprop $(w)=$ notprop $(w)$.
    ${ }^{2}$ Note that by the definition of $\varphi_{w}$, we have that $\vdash_{\text {IPC }}\left(\varphi_{w}^{*} \rightarrow q\right) \leftrightarrow\left(\varphi_{w}^{*} \rightarrow q^{\prime}\right)$ for any $q, q^{\prime} \in \operatorname{newprop}(w)$. So it does not really matter which $q \in$ newprop $(w)$ is chosen in the definition of $\psi_{w}^{*}$. For simplicity, here we stipulate $q=p_{i}$ to be the one that has the least index.

